

OLLENDORFF'S
NEW METHOD
OF LEARNING TO
READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK
THE
FRENCH LANGUAGE,
OR
FIRST LESSONS IN FRENCH;
(INTRODUCTORY TO OLLENDORFF'S LARGER GRAMMAR.)

By G. W. GREENE,

Instructor in Modern Languages in Brown University.

~~~~~  
MONTREAL:  
PRINTED BY CHARLES G. DAGG, ST. FR. XAVIER ST.

1861

MONTREAL:  
PRINTED BY CHARLES G. DAGG,  
*37 St. Francois Xavier Street.*

## PREFACE.

---

THIS little volume is intended as an introduction to "Ollendorff's Complete French Method." Consequently no attempt has been made to treat any subject fully, and attention has been given only to those points which can facilitate the study of the larger work. Much, therefore, has been omitted which would necessarily have found a place in a full treatise, and the arrangement and selection of what is given have been made with direct reference to that object. It is believed that the student, who shall take the pains to go carefully through this volume in the manner suggested in the directions for studying it, will come to the study of the "Complete Method" with a degree of preparation which will render his subsequent progress easy and agreeable. Younger scholars should always do so, and even those who are more advanced will find their labours lightened by forming a good general idea of their subject by means of these pages before they enter upon a fuller course.

G. W. G.

BROWN UNIVERSITY.

## DIRECTIONS FOR STUDYING THIS WORK.

---

LET the Instructor teach the pronunciation of the words contained in the lesson.

In hearing the lesson he should first examine the pupil carefully upon the vocabulary, the rules, and the phrases.

He should then repeat to him the English phrases of the exercises, requiring him to translate them into French ; and, at least every three lessons, he should require him to read from the exercises, translating them into French as fast as he can read.

Besides the exercises contained in the volume, he should be required to compose eight or ten lines in French upon each lesson ; taking care to introduce his full stock of words and phrases, and writing out the whole carefully.

This is a very important part of the method, which is frequently neglected.

The tables of the forms of words should be used in connection with the lessons at the discretion of the Instructor.

With the twenty-eight lessons he should begin the reading lessons in the "*Companion to Ollendorff*."

The vocabularies should be repeated from the beginning at least once a week.

## OLLENDORFFS' METHOD.

# PRIMARY LESSONS IN FRENCH.

### FIRST LESSON.—*Première leçon.*

|                        |                           |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| Have.                  | Avez.                     |
| You.                   | Vous.                     |
| The.                   | Le.                       |
| The bread              | Le pain.                  |
| The wine.              | Le vin.                   |
| The butter.            | Le beurre.                |
| The milk.              | Le lait.                  |
| The coffee.            | Le café.                  |
| The tea.               | Le thé.                   |
| Have you the bread ?   | Avez-vous le pain ?       |
| My.                    | Mon.                      |
| Your.                  | Votre.                    |
| Have you my bread ?    | Avez-vous mon pain ?      |
| Have you your butter ? | Avez-vous votre beurre. ✓ |

See Exercise 1st.

### SECOND LESSON — *Seconde leçon.*

|       |     |
|-------|-----|
| I.    | Je. |
| Have. | Ai. |

The *e* of *je* is always elided before words beginning with a vowel, and its place marked by an apostrophe. Thus instead of *je ai*—we write *j'ai*.

|            |             |
|------------|-------------|
| The broom. | Le balai.   |
| The soap.  | Le savon.   |
| The paper. | Le papier.  |
| The hat.   | Le chapeau. |

The salt.  
 The pepper.  
 The cheese.  
 The ribbon.  
 The cotton.  
 The button.  
 Have you the ribbon?  
 I have the ribbon.  
 Have you my cheese?  
 I have your cheese.

Le sel.  
 Le poivre.  
 Le fromage.  
 Le ruban.  
 Le coton.  
 Le bouton.  
 Avez-vous le ruban?  
 J'ai le ruban.  
 Avez-vous mon fromage?  
 J'ai votre fromage.

See Exercise 2d.

### THIRD LESSON.—*Troisième leçon.*

Which or what?  
 The vinegar.  
 Which vinegar have you?  
 I have my vinegar.  
 Good.  
 Bad.  
 Beautiful.  
 Ugly.  
 Pretty.  
 Old.  
 The plate.  
 The glass.  
 The knife.  
 Which knife have you?  
 I have the good knife.  
 Have you my pretty glass?  
 I have your ugly glass.

Quel ?  
 Le vinaigre.  
 Quel vinaigre avez-vous ?  
 J'ai mon vinaigre.  
 Bon.  
 Mauvais.  
 Beau.  
 Vilain.  
 Joli.  
 Vieux.  
 Le plat.  
 Le verre.  
 Le couteau.  
 Quel couteau avez-vous ?  
 J'ai le bon couteau.  
 Avez-vous mon joli verre ?  
 J'ai votre vilain verre.

See Exercise 3d.

### FOURTH LESSON.—*Quatrième leçon.*

You have.  
 The gold.

Vous avez.  
 L'or.

*Le*, like *je*, drops its *e* before a vowel or an *h* mute.

## PRIMARY LESSONS IN FRENCH.

|                          |                              |
|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| You have the gold.       | Vous avez l'or.              |
| The silver—the money.    | L'argent.                    |
| The iron.                | Le fer.                      |
| The steel.               | L'acier.                     |
| The copper.              | Le cuivre.                   |
| The cloth.               | Le drap.                     |
| The dog.                 | Le chien.                    |
| The horse.               | Le cheval.                   |
| The wood.                | Le bois.                     |
| Have you the pretty dog? | Avez-vous le joli chien ?    |
| It.                      | Le (pronoun.)                |
| I have it.               | Je l'ai.                     |
| Have you my bad cloth ?  | Avez-vous mon mauvais drap ? |
| I have.                  | Je l'ai.                     |

Observe that, where we say, *I have*, or *I have it*, in answer to a question, the French must say, *I it have*—*Je l'ai*.

|                                                  |                                              |
|--------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| And.                                             | Et.                                          |
| I have your good gold and my bad copper.         | J'ai votre bon or et mon mauvais cuivre.     |
| The gun.                                         | Le fusil.                                    |
| The shoe.                                        | Le soulier.                                  |
| The candlestick.                                 | Le chandelier.                               |
| The string.                                      | Le cordon.                                   |
| I have the good string ; which string have you ? | J'ai le bon cordon ; quel cordon avez-vous ? |

See exercise 4th.

## FIFTH LESSON.—*Cinquième leçon.*

|                     |                        |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| Not.                | Ne—pas.                |
| I have not.         | Je n'ai pas.           |
| The cap.            | Le bonnet.             |
| I have not the cap. | Je n'ai pas le bonnet. |
| The cat.            | Le chat.               |
| The desk.           | Le pupitre.            |
| The writing-book.   | Le cahier.             |
| The book.           | Le livre.              |
| The inkstand.       | L'encrier.             |
| The umbrella.       | Le parapluie.          |
| The basket.         | Le panier.             |



|                         |                            |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|
| The hammer.             | Le marteau.                |
| The cart.               | Le chariot.                |
| The cradle.             | Le berceau.                |
| Small.                  | Petit.                     |
| Have you the small cap? | Avez-vous le petit bonnet? |
| Great or large.         | Grand.                     |
| Round.                  | Rond.                      |
| Square.                 | Carré.                     |

The adjective in French is sometimes placed before and sometimes after the noun. Rules will be given for such as can be reduced to rules; but the student should accustom himself from the beginning to place them as they are placed in the examples.

Adjectives of form are placed after the noun.

|                                                                 |                                                                  |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Have you the round basket?                                      | Avez-vous le panier rond?                                        |
| No, sir, I have not the round basket: I have the square basket. | Non, monsieur, je n'ai pas le panier rond: j'ai le panier carré. |
| Have you the large round inkstand?                              | Avez-vous le grand encrier rond?                                 |
| No, sir, I have the small square inkstand.                      | Non, monsieur, j'ai le petit encrier carré.                      |

See Exercise 5th.

## SIXTH LESSON.—*Sixième leçon.*

|              |                   |
|--------------|-------------------|
| We have.     | Nous avons.       |
| We have not. | Nous n'avons pas. |

For the elision of the *e* in *ne* compare *le* and *je*, Less. 2-4.

|                            |                                       |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Our.                       | Notre.                                |
| Have you our dog's string? | { Avez-vous le cordon de notre chien. |
| Of.                        | De.                                   |

In English we can either say, *my dog's string*, or *the string of my dog*. In French there is but one way of expressing this idea of relation or possession, and we must always say *of my—de mon; of your—de votre*.

# PRIMARY LESSONS IN FRENCH.

|                            |                              |
|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| The father.                | Le père.                     |
| The son.                   | Le fils.                     |
| The brother.               | Le frère.                    |
| The boy.                   | Le garçon.                   |
| The husband.               | Le mari.                     |
| What book have you ?       | Quel livre avez-vous ?       |
| I have your father's book. | J'ai le livre de votre père. |
| Wooden.                    | De bois.                     |

In English the material of which a thing is made is expressed by putting the name of the material before that of the object. French the name of the object comes first, and is connected that of the material by the preposition *de*.

|                                 |                                             |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| The wooden horse.               | Le cheval de bois.                          |
| The iron gun.                   | Le fusil de fer.                            |
| The copper padlock.             | Le cadenas de cuivre.                       |
| The steel gridiron.             | Le grill d'acier.                           |
| The wooden stool.               | Le tabouret de bois.                        |
| The fan.                        | L'éventail.                                 |
| The fox.                        | Le renard.                                  |
| Large.                          | Gros.                                       |
| Long.                           | Long.                                       |
| Light.                          | Léger.                                      |
| Low.                            | Bas.                                        |
| High.                           | Haut.                                       |
| Wide.                           | Large.                                      |
| Have you your small paper hat ? | Avez-vous votre petit chapeau de papier ?   |
| We have our big paper hat.      | { Nous avons notre grand<br>peau de papier. |
| Have you the long copper horn ? |                                             |
| We have the light iron comb.    | { Avez-vous le long corn<br>cuivre ?        |
|                                 | { Nous avons le léger peigne<br>fer.        |

See Exercise 6th.

## SEVENTH LESSON.—*Septième leçon.*

Have I ?  
Have we ?

Ai-je ?  
Avons-nous ?

Any thing.  
 Have I any thing ?  
 You have something.  
 Have we anything ?  
 Nothing.  
 You have nothing.  
 Something good.  
 Something bad.

Quelque chose.  
 Ai-je quelque chose ?  
 Vous avez quelque chose.  
 Avons-nous quelque chose ?  
 Ne rien.  
 Vous n'avez rien.  
 Quelque chose de bon.  
 Quelque chose de mauvais.

*Quelque chose* before an adjective takes the preposition *de*.

The corn.  
 The wheat.  
 The rye.  
 The hay.  
 The hemp.  
 The flax.  
 The rice.  
 The sugar.  
 The tobacco.  
 The grain.  
 The friend.  
 The physician.  
 The enemy.  
 Have I any thing good ?  
 You have the good rice.  
 Have we any thing bad ?  
 You have nothing bad.

Le blé.  
 Le froment.  
 Le seigle.  
 Le foin.  
 Le chanvre.  
 Le lin.  
 Le riz.  
 Le sucre.  
 Le tabac.  
 Le grain.  
 L'ami.  
 Le médecin.  
 L'ennemi.  
 Ai-je quelque chose de bon ?  
 Vous avez le bon riz.  
 Avons-nous quelque chose de mauvais ?  
 Vous n'avez rien de mauvais.

See Exercise 7th.

## EIGHTH LESSON.—*Huitième leçon.*

He has.  
 Has he.

Il a.  
 A-t-il ?

In the interrogation *a-t-il* ? the *t* is inserted to avoid the disagreeable sound produced by the concurrence of two vowels.

Has he my rice ?  
 He has your rice.  
 His.

A-t-il mon riz ?  
 Il a votre riz.  
 Sont

Has he any thing ugly ?

He has his ugly paper hat.

Has the father his hemp ?

A-t-il quelque chose de vilain ?

{ Il a son vilain chapeau de papier.

Le père a-t-il son chanvre ?

When the subject of an interrogative preposition is a pronoun, the preposition begins with a verb as in English ; but when it is a noun, this noun is generally placed at the beginning of a sentence, and the pronoun *il* is also used, being placed immediately after the verb.

But.

He has not his hemp, but he has his flax.

Who ?

Who has the good tobacco ?

My father has the good tobacco.

The looking-glass.

The stick.

Young.

Strong.

Learned.

Sick.

The child.

The man.

The nephew.

The son-in-law.

The cousin.

The neighbour.

The comrade.

The old man.

The giant.

The dwarf.

Has the young man the small stick ?

No, sir, he has not, but the old man has.

Mais.

Il n'a pas son chanvre, mais il a son lin.

Qui ?

Qui a le bon tabac ?

Mon père a le bon tabac.

Le miroir.

Le bâton.

Jeune.

Fort.

Savant.

Malade.

L'enfant.

L'homme.

Le neveu.

Le gendre.

Le cousin.

Le voisin.

Le camarade.

Le vieillard.

Le géant.

Le nain.

Le jeune homme a-t-il le petit bâton ?

Non, monsieur, il ne l'a pas, mais le vieillard l'a.

See Exercise 8th.

NINTH LESSON.—*Neuvième leçon.*

|                                  |                                       |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Mine.                            | Le mien.                              |
| His.                             | Le sien.                              |
| Ours.                            | Le nôtre.                             |
| Yours.                           | Le vôtre.                             |
| Have you your shoe ?             | Avez-vous votre soulier ?             |
| I have yours, I have not mine.   | J'ai le vôtre, je n'ai pas le mien.   |
| Has the old man his umbrella ?   | Le vieillard a-t-il son parapluie ?   |
| He has mine, he has not his.     | Il a le mien, mais il n'a pas le sien |
| He has his and yours.            | Il a le sien et le vôtre.             |
| Which umbrella has the old man ? | Quel parapluie le vieillard a-t-il ?  |
| Which ribbon has my father ?     | Quel ruban mon père a-t-il ?          |
| He has yours.                    | Il a le vôtre.                        |
| Has he ?                         | L'a-t-il ?                            |
| No, he has not, but he has his.  | Non, il ne l'a pas, mais il a le sien |
| The Jew.                         | Le Juif.                              |
| The negro.                       | Le nègre.                             |
| The king.                        | Le roi.                               |
| The people.                      | Le peuple.                            |
| The soldier.                     | Le soldat.                            |
| The colonel.                     | Le colonel.                           |
| The captain.                     | Le capitaine                          |
| The prince.                      | Le prince.                            |
| The duke.                        | Le duc.                               |
| The count.                       | Le comte.                             |
| The baron.                       | Le baron.                             |
| The gentleman.                   | Le gentilhomme.                       |
| The lord.                        | Le seigneur.                          |

See Exercise 9th.

TENTH LESSON.—*Dixième leçon.*

|        |          |
|--------|----------|
| Thy.   | Ton.     |
| Thine. | Le tien. |

Hast thou thy hat?  
I have mine, but thou hast not thine.

What?  
What have you that is pretty?  
I have the pretty little stool.

*Of the*

Have you the tailor's cloth?  
The tailor.  
The leather.  
No, sir, I have the shoemaker's leather shoe.  
The shoemaker.  
I have, thou hast, he has.  
We have, you have, they have.

The sofa.  
The piano.  
The carpet.  
The curtain.  
The cannon.  
The sabre.  
The huntsman.  
The servant.  
The coachman.  
The gardener.  
The countryman.  
The merchant.  
The bricklayer.  
The carpenter.  
The joiner.  
The lawyer.

As-tu ton chapeau?  
J'ai le mien, mais tu n'as pas le tien.

Que?  
Q'avez-vous de joli?  
J'ai le joli petit tabouret.  
{ du before a consonant.  
{ de l' before a vowel or h mute.  
{ Avez-vous le drap du tail-  
{ leur?

Le tailleur.  
Le cuir.  
Non, monsieur, j'ai le soulier de cuir du cordonnier.  
Le cordonnier.  
J'ai, tu as, il a.  
Nous avons, vous avez, ils ont.

Le sofa.  
Le piano.  
Le tapis.  
Le rideau.  
Le canon.  
Le sabre.  
Le chasseur.  
Le domestique.  
Le cocher.  
Le jardinier.  
Le paysan.  
Le négociant.  
Le maçon.  
Le charpentier.  
Le menuisier.  
L'avocat.

See Exercise 10th.



ELEVENTH LESSON.—*Onzième leçon.*

I am, thou art, he is.  
We are, you are, they are.

Je suis, tu es, il est.  
{ Nous sommes, vous êtes, ils  
{ sont.

I am large, but my brother is small.

Is the neighbor's hat big ?

It is not big.

He. It.

Red.

Yellow.

Black.

White.

Green.

Blue.

Grey.

Brown.

Carnation.

Vermillion.

Pink.

Je suis grand, mais mon frère est petit.

{ Le chapeau du voisin est-il grand ?

Il n'est pas grand.

Il.

Rouge.

Jaune.

Noir.

Blanc.

Vert.

Bleu.

Gris.

Brun.

Incarnat.

Vermillon.

Rose.

Adjectives of colour follow the noun.

What book has the lawyer ?

The good lawyer has the white book, and the bad lawyer has the black book.

Also.

The cat is black, and the dog is black also.

Where.

Where is the tailor's black coat ?

On.

The floor.

It is on the floor.

In.

Where is your brother's dog.

He is in the garden.

Is he in the garden ?

He is not in the garden.

The roof.

Is he not on the roof ?

Quel livre l'avocat a-t-il ?

Le bon avocat a le livre blanc, et le mauvais avocat a le livre noir.

Aussi.

Le chat est noir, et le chien est noir aussi.

Où ?

Où est l'habit noir du tailleur ?

Sur.

Le plancher.

Il est sur le plancher.

Dans.

Où est le chien de votre frère ?

Il est dans le jardin.

Est-il dans le jardin ?

Il n'est pas dans le jardin.

Le toit.

N'est-il pas sur le toit ?

See Exercise 11th.

TWELFTH LESSON.—*Douzième leçon.*

In English, adjectives have no particular form for the plural. But in French, not only nouns, but adjectives, pronouns, and articles are changed to form the plural.

Nouns, adjectives, some forms of the article and some of the pronoun form their plural by adding *s* to the singular.

|                                             |                                                   |                       |
|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| The road.                                   | Le chemin.                                        | Les chemins.          |
| The path.                                   | Le sentier.                                       | Les sentiers.         |
| The sidewalk.                               | Le trottoir.                                      | Les trottoirs.        |
| The cape.                                   | Le cap.                                           | Les caps.             |
| The top.                                    | Le sommet.                                        | Les sommets.          |
| The rock.                                   | Le rocher.                                        | Les rochers.          |
| Of the.                                     | Du, ( <i>sing.</i> )                              | Des, ( <i>plur.</i> ) |
| Of the park.                                | Du parc.                                          | Des parcs.            |
| Of the grove.                               | Du bosquet.                                       | Des bosquets.         |
| Of the Orchard.                             | Du verger.                                        | Des vergers.          |
| Green.                                      | Vert.                                             | Verts.                |
| The field.                                  | Le champ.                                         | Les champs.           |
| The fields are green.                       | Les champs sont verts.                            |                       |
| Cold.                                       | Froid.                                            | Froids.               |
| Warm.                                       | Chaud.                                            | Chauds.               |
| Are the countrymen's fields cold?           | Les champs des paysans sont-ils froids?           |                       |
| They are not cold, they are warm and green. | Ils ne sont pas froids, ils sont chauds et verts. |                       |
| The sand.                                   | Le sable.                                         |                       |
| The kitchen-garden.                         | Le potager.                                       |                       |
| The river.                                  | Le fleuve.                                        |                       |
| The torrent.                                | Le torrent.                                       |                       |
| The pond.                                   | Le bassin.                                        |                       |
| The ditch.                                  | Le fossé.                                         |                       |
| The shore.                                  | Le rivage.                                        |                       |
| The bank.                                   | Le bord.                                          |                       |
| Deep.                                       | Profond.                                          |                       |
| Rapid.                                      | Rapide.                                           |                       |
| Shallow.                                    | Bas.                                              |                       |
| Low.                                        | Bas.                                              |                       |
| Steep.                                      | Escarpé.                                          |                       |
| Thin.                                       | Mince.                                            |                       |



The river is rapid and the banks are steep. | Le fleuve est rapide et les bords sont escarpés.

See Exercise 12th.

### THIRTEENTH LESSON.—*Treizième leçon.*

My.

Thy.

His.

Our.

Your.

Their.

Mon.

Mes.

Ton.

Tes.

Son.

Ses.

Notre.

Nos.

Votre.

Vos.

Leur.

Leurs.

Have you my red shoes?

{ Avez-vous mes souliers  
rouges?

I have your white shoes.

J'ai vos souliers blancs.

Have the merchants their books?

Les négociants ont-ils leurs livres?

It. Them.

Le. Les.

They have not.

Ils ne les ont pas.

Mine. Thine. His.

{ Les miens. Les tiens. Les  
siens.

Ours. Yours. Theirs.

{ Les nôtres. Les vôtres. Les  
leurs.

Have we ours?

Avons-nous les nôtres?

No, we have theirs.

Non, nous avons leurs.

The author.

L'auteur.

The watchmaker.

L'horloger.

The admiral.

L'amiral.

The goldsmith.

L'orfèvre.

The editor.

L'éditeur.

The volume.

Le volume.

The pencil.

Le crayon.

The lake.

Le lac.

The gulf.

Le golfe.

The nest.

Le nid.

The hair.

Le poil.

The horsehair.

Le crin.

1ST EXCEPTION.—Nouns ending in *s*, *x* or *z* are not changed to form the plural.

The marsh.

Le—les marais.

The country.

Le—les pays.

|             |                |
|-------------|----------------|
| The body.   | Le—les corps.  |
| The nose,   | Le—les nez.    |
| The palace. | Le—les palais. |
| The arm.    | Le—les bras.   |
| The back.   | Le—les dos.    |

See Exercise 13th.

## FOURTEENTH LESSON.—*Quatorzième leçon.*

In French all nouns are either masculine or feminine. There is no neuter gender.

|         |                                                    |
|---------|----------------------------------------------------|
| The     | Fem. art. La, ( <i>sing.</i> ) Les, ( <i>pl.</i> ) |
| Of the. | De la. Des.                                        |

The *a* of the feminine article, like *e* of the masculine, is elided before words beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute.

The rules for the formation of the masculine plural hold good for the feminine also.

|                   |                       |
|-------------------|-----------------------|
| The woman. Women. | La femme. Les femmes. |
| The mother.       | La mère. Les mères.   |
| The daughter.     | La fille.             |
| The sister.       | La sœur.              |
| The aunt.         | La tante.             |
| The niece.        | La nièce.             |
| The candle.       | La chandelle.         |
| The bottle.       | La bouteille.         |
| The lock.         | La serrure.           |
| The key.          | La clef.              |

She. They, (*f. m.*)

Elle. Elles,

Has she ?

A-t-elle ?

Has she the golden key ?

A-t-elle la clef d'or ?

No, she has the silver key and the iron lock.

Non, elle a la clef d'argent et la serrure de fer.

My. Thy. Her.

Ma. Ta. Sa.

The other forms are alike in both genders.

Our mothers. Our fathers. | Nos mères. Nos pères.

In English the possessive pronoun follows the gender of the possessor. In French, that of the thing possessed. *My, thy, his, her, its*, must be rendered by *mon, ton, son*, when the thing possessed is masculine, and by *ma, ta, sa*, when it is feminine without regard to the gender of the possessor.

The father and his son or his daughter.

Or.

The mother and her son or her daughter.

Has the mother her son's gold key?

No, she has her daughter's silver key.

The pear.

The nut.

The plum.

The cherry.

The razor.

The poniard.

The sword.

The nail.

The hook.

Le père et son fils ou sa fille.

Ou.

La mère et son fils ou sa fille.

La mère a-t-elle la clef d'or de son fils?

Non, elle a la clef d'argent de sa fille.

La poire.

La noix.

La prune.

La cerise.

Le rasoir.

Le poignard.

L'épée, (*fem.*)

Le clou.

Le crochet.

See Exercise 14th.

## FIFTEENTH LESSON.—*Quinzième leçon.*

What? (*fem.*)

Mine.

Thine.

Her.

Ours. Yours. Theirs.

A.

Has the woman a pear?

She has hers, and you have yours.

Quelle?

La mienne.

La tienne.

La sienne.

La nôtre. La vôtre. La leur.

Un, (*masc.*) Une, (*fem.*)

La femme a-t-elle une poire?

Elle a la sienne et vous avez la vôtre.

*E* mute is the characteristic termination of feminine adjectives, so that adjectives, which already have this termination in the masculine, have no need of changing to form the feminine, and most of those which end in any other letter in the masculine merely add an *e* mute to become feminine.

The young man.

The young woman.

Pale.

Le jeune homme.

La jeune femme.

Pâle.

|                                                     |                                                              |
|-----------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| Tepid.                                              | Tiède.                                                       |
| Dirty.                                              | Sale.                                                        |
| Inspid.                                             | Fade.                                                        |
| Wise.                                               | Sage.                                                        |
| Brave.                                              | Brave.                                                       |
| Bald.*                                              | Chauve.                                                      |
| Awkward.                                            | Gauche.                                                      |
| Cowardly.                                           | Lâche.                                                       |
| Rich.                                               | Riche.                                                       |
| Poor.                                               | Pauvre.                                                      |
| Free.                                               | Libre.                                                       |
| Sombre.                                             | Sombre.                                                      |
| Sober.                                              | Sobre.                                                       |
| The table.                                          | La table.                                                    |
| The chair.                                          | La chaise.                                                   |
| The house.                                          | La maison.                                                   |
| The carriage.                                       | La voiture.                                                  |
| Under.                                              | Sous.                                                        |
| Is our neighbour's poor little cat<br>on the table? | Le pauvre petit chat de notre<br>voisin est-il sur la table? |
| No, it is under the chair.                          | Non, il est sous la chaise.                                  |
| Very.                                               | Très.                                                        |
| Are the king's soldiers brave?                      | { Les soldats du roi sont-ils<br>braves?                     |
| They are very brave.                                |                                                              |
|                                                     | Ils sont très braves.                                        |

EXCEPTION 2.—Nouns and adjectives ending in *au*, *eu*, or *ou* form their plural by adding *x* instead of *s*.

|                                                                        |                                                                          |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Has the merchant the poor<br>countrymen's beautiful<br>birds?          | Le négociant a-t-il les beaux<br>oiseaux des pauvres pay-<br>sans?       |
| He has not their beautiful<br>birds, but he has their<br>great cloaks. | Il n'a pas leurs beaux oi-<br>seaux, mais il a leurs grands<br>manteaux. |
| The bird. The birds.                                                   | L'oiseau. Les oiseaux.                                                   |
| The cloak.                                                             | Le manteau.                                                              |
| The place.                                                             | Le lieu.                                                                 |
| The fire.                                                              | Le feu.                                                                  |
| The jewel.                                                             | Le bijou.                                                                |

See Exercise 15th.

SIXTEENTH LESSON.—*Seizième leçon.*

This. These.

Has this merchant a pretty wife?

No, his wife is not pretty, but his daughter is very pretty.

Ce, (*masc.*) Cette, (*fem.*)  
 Ces, (*plur.*)  
 Ce négociant a-t-il une jolie femme?

Non, sa femme n'est pas jolie, mais sa fille est très jolie.

It has been seen that the French take great care to prevent two vowels from coming together at the end of one word and the beginning of another. This principle extends to the demonstrative pronoun *ce*, which, before a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, is changed to *cet*.

Has this man his servant's handsome wooden basket?

This man has not, but this woman has.

Cet homme a-t-il le beau panier de bois de son domestique?

Cet homme ne l'a pas, mais cette femme l'a.

Nouns and adjectives ending in *al* or *ail* form their plural by changing these terminations into *aux*.

The fine horse.

Le beau cheval. Les beaux chevaux.

Adjectives ending in *f* in the masculine form their feminine by changing the *f* into *ve*.

Is this man active?

No, but his daughter is active.

Cet homme est-il actif?

Non, mais sa fille est active.

New.

Brief.

Lively.

Passive.

Attentive.

Timid.

Instructive.

Idle.

Negative.

Affirmative.

Relative.

Excessive.

Native.

Neut.

Neuve.

Bret.

Brève.

Vif.

Vive.

Passif.

Passive.

Attentif.

Crainitif.

Instructif.

Oisif.

Négatif.

Affirmatif.

Relatif.

Excessif.

Natif.

|                                                  |                                                    |
|--------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| Massive.                                         | Massif.                                            |
| Vindictive.                                      | Vindictif.                                         |
| Artless.                                         | Naïf.                                              |
| Distinctive.                                     | Distinctif.                                        |
| Is this boy artless?                             | Ce garçon est-il naïf?                             |
| No, but this pretty little girl is very artless. | Non, mais cette jolie petite fille est très naïve. |

See Exercise 16th.

## SEVENTEENTH LESSON.—*Dix-septième leçon.*

|                                                                       |                                                                |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------|
| That or the one.                                                      | Celui, ( <i>masc.</i> ) Celle, ( <i>fem.</i> )                 |
| Has the shoemaker the mason's new shoe?                               | Le cordonnier a-t-il le soulier neuf du maçon?                 |
| He has the captain's.                                                 | Il a celui du capitaine.                                       |
| The boot.                                                             | La botte.                                                      |
| Has he your father's boot?                                            | A-t-il la botte de votre père?                                 |
| No, he has not my father's, but he has my sister's.                   | Non, il n'a pas celle de mon père mais il a celle de ma sœur.  |
| Those.                                                                | Ceux, ( <i>masc.</i> ) Celles, ( <i>fem.</i> )                 |
| Has the gardener the author's instructive books?                      | Le jardinier a-t-il les livres instructifs de l'auteur?        |
| No, he has the colonel's.                                             | Non, il a ceux du colonel.                                     |
| That which.                                                           | Celui que. Celle que.                                          |
| Those which.                                                          | Ceux que. Celles que.                                          |
| Have you the horses which my father has, or those which my uncle has? | Avez-vous les chevaux que mon père a, ou ceux que mon oncle a? |
| I have those which your cousin has.                                   | J'ai ceux que votre cousin a.                                  |
| The letter.                                                           | La lettre.                                                     |
| The margin.                                                           | La marge.                                                      |
| The wick.                                                             | La mèche.                                                      |
| The candle.                                                           | La chandelle.                                                  |
| The taper.                                                            | La bougie.                                                     |
| The tablecloth.                                                       | La nappe.                                                      |
| The spoon.                                                            | La cuillère.                                                   |
| The saltcellar.                                                       | La salière.                                                    |
| The dishes and plates.                                                | La vaisselle.                                                  |
| The porcelain.                                                        | La porcelaine.                                                 |

The pitcher—jar.  
The spit.  
The key.  
The basket.  
The cord.  
The packthread.  
The wash-basin.

La cruche.  
La broche.  
La clef.  
La corbeille.  
La corde.  
La ficelle.  
La cuvette.

See Exercise 17th.

## EIGHTEENTH LESSON.—*Dix-huitième leçon.*

This book. These books.  
That book. Those books.  
This woman.  
That woman.

Ce livre-ci. Ces livres-ci.  
Ce livre-là. Ces livres-là.  
Cette femme-ci.  
Cette femme-là.

When a distinction is made between two or more objects, *this* and *that* are expressed by *ce—ci*, and *ce—là*, *celle—ci*, &c. &c.

Have you this or that book ?

Neither—nor.

I have neither this book nor that book.

Has the tailor's wife this letter or that letter ?

This. That.

She has neither this nor that.

One.  
Two.  
Three.  
Four.  
Five.  
Six.  
Seven.  
Eight.  
Nine.  
Ten.

{ Avez-vous ce livre-ci ou ce livre-là.  
{ Ne (before the verb) ni—ni.  
{ Je n'ai ni ce livre-ci ni ce livre-là.  
{ La femme du tailleur a-t-elle cette lettre-ci ou cette lettre-là ?  
{ Celui-ci. Celle-ci. Celui-là. Celle-là.  
{ Elle n'a ni celle-ci ni celle-là.  
Un. Une, (*fem.*)  
Deux.  
Trois.  
Quatre.  
Cinq.  
Six.  
Sept.  
Huit.  
Neuf.  
Dix.

Have my three friends the five good books which the merchant has?

The same.

Have our friends the same birds that we have?

They have not the same, they have our neighbour's.

Have they these pencils or those?

They have neither these nor those

The fork.

The napkin.

The bottle.

The cup.

The coffee-pot.

The watch.

The clock.

The box.

The brush.

Mes trois amis ont-ils les cinq bons livres que le négociant a?

Le même. Les mêmes.

Nos amis ont-ils les mêmes oiseaux que nous avons?

Ils n'ont pas les mêmes, ils ont ceux de notre voisin

Ont-ils ces crayons-ci ou ceux-là?

Ils n'ont ni ceux-ci ni ceux-là.

La fourchette.

La serviette.

La bouteille.

La tasse.

La cafetière.

La montre.

La pendule.

La boîte.

La brosse.

See Exercise 18th.

## NINETEENTH LESSON.—*Dix-neuvième leçon.*

Had.

Been.

Who has had the baker's bread?

His good wife has had it.

Curious.

Serious.

Has the man been curious?

No, he has been serious.

To have.

Hunger.

To be hungry.

Eu.

Été,

Qui a eu le pain du boulanger?

Sa bonne femme l'a eu.

Curieux.

Sérieux.

L'homme a-t-il été curieux?

Non, il a été sérieux.

Avoir.

La faim.

Avoir faim.

It will be seen that the English and French idioms differ widely in this and other expressions of the same kind; the English requiring an adjective with the verb *to be*, the French a noun with the verb *to have*.



Is this man hungry ?

He is very hungry.

Very.

Thirst.

Cold, (adj. and noun.)

Heat and hot.

Fear.

Shame.

Wrong.

Right.

Sleep.

Who is sleepy ?

I am sleepy.

Who is ashamed ?

This little boy is ashamed.

Who is right ?

Your brother is right, but you  
are not wrong.

Somebody. Anybody.

Is any body hungry ?

Nobody.

Nobody is hungry.

Cet homme a-t-il faim ?

Il a bien faim.

Bien.

La soif.

Le froid—froid.

Le chaud—chaud.

La peur.

La honte.

Le tort.

La raison.

Le sommeil.

Qui a le sommeil ?

J'ai sommeil.

Qui a honte ?

Ce petit garçon a honte.

Qui a raison ?

Votre frère a raison, mais vous  
n'avez pas tort.

Quelqu'un.

Quelqu'un a-t-il faim ?

Personne ne.

Personne n'a faim.

It has been seen that in French it takes two negatives to make a negation. *Personne*, being a negative of itself, is used with *ne* only.

Has any body the same birds  
that we have ?

Nobody has the same that you  
have.

Eleven.

Twelve.

Thirteen.

Fourteen.

Fifteen.

Sixteen.

Seventeen.

Eighteen.

Nineteen.

Twenty.

Quelqu'un a-t-il les mêmes  
oiseaux que nous avons ?

Personne n'a les mêmes que  
vous avez.

Onze.

Douze.

Treize.

Quatorze.

Quinze.

Seize.

Dix-sept.

Dix-huit.

Dix-neuf.

Vingt.

See Exercise 19th.

TWENTIETH LESSON.—*Vingtième leçon.*

Some. Any.

Has any body any paper ?

Somebody has some paper.

My uncle has some meat.

Has your father any gold ?

No, but he has some horses.

Du. De l'. De la. Des.

Quelqu'un a-t-il du papier ?

Quelqu'un a du papier.

Mon oncle a de la viande.

Votre père a-t-il de l'or ?

Non, mais il a des cheveux.

*Some or any* are made use of to designate an *unfixed* part of an *undefined* whole ; as, " Give me some sugar." Here the largeness or the smallness of the part is not fixed on, and the whole mass of sugar, out of which the part is to come, is not at all defined or pointed out. The French have no words that, in this work of designating nouns, answer to our *some* or *any*. The business of these words is performed by *du, de tu, des*.

The metal.

Some iron.

Some lead.

Some copper.

The bronze.

The tin.

The mercury.

The platina.

The sulphur.

The marble.

The plaster of Paris.

The trunk.

The branch.

The laurel.

The walnut-tree.

The cherry-tree.

The apple-tree.

The plum-tree.

The pear-tree.

The fig-tree.

The chestnut-tree.

The palm-tree.

Cork.

Ivy.

The bush.

Le metal. Les metaux.

Du fer.

Du plomb.

Du cuivre.

Le bronze.

Le fer blanc.

Le mercure.

Le platine.

Le soufre.

Le marbre.

Le plâtre—le gypse.

Le tronc.

Le rameau.

Le laurier.

Le noyer.

Le cerisier.

Le pommier.

Le prunier.

Le poirier.

Le figuier.

Le chataignier.

Le palmier.

Le liège.

Le lierre.

Le buisson.

|                                                         |                                                         |
|---------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------|
| The turf.                                               | Le gazon.                                               |
| There is. There are.                                    | Il y a.                                                 |
| There are laurel branches on the turf.                  | Il y a des rameaux de laurier sur le gazon.             |
| There are some cherry-trees in our good uncle's garden. | Il y a des cerisiers dans le jardin de notre bon oncle. |

See Exercise 20th.

## TWENTY-FIRST LESSON.—*Vingt et unième leçon.*

When there is an adjective, that comes before the nouns, the article is left out, and the preposition *de* only is used.

|                             |                       |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------|
| Have you any wine ?         | Avez-vous du vin ?    |
| Yes, I have some good wine. | Oui, j'ai de bon vin. |

But if the adjective comes after the noun, the article must be used.

|                                                                           |                                                                             |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Has your father any wine ?                                                | Votre père a-t-il du vin ?                                                  |
| My father has some good wine and some red wine too.                       | Mon père a de bon vin et du vin rouge aussi.                                |
| Is there—are there ?                                                      | Y a-t-il ?                                                                  |
| Are there any large trees in your garden ?                                | Y a-t-il de grands arbres dans votre jardin ?                               |
| There are some large trees, and there are some green trees too.           | Il y a de grands arbres, et il y a des arbres verts aussi.                  |
| Who—which, (rel.)                                                         | Qui.                                                                        |
| There are some trees which are large, and some trees which are green too. | Il y a des arbres qui son grand, et il y a des arbres qui sont verts aussi. |
| The sack.                                                                 | Le sac.                                                                     |
| The vase.                                                                 | Le vase.                                                                    |
| The basket.                                                               | Le panier.                                                                  |
| The glass.                                                                | Le verre.                                                                   |
| The goblet.                                                               | Le gobelet.                                                                 |
| The cork.                                                                 | Le bouchon.                                                                 |
| The furniture.                                                            | Le meuble.                                                                  |
| The looking-glass.                                                        | Le miroir.                                                                  |
| The chandelier.                                                           | Le lustre.                                                                  |
| The torch.                                                                | Le flambeau.                                                                |
| The bed.                                                                  | Le lit.                                                                     |

|               |               |
|---------------|---------------|
| The cushion.  | Le coussin.   |
| The armchair. | Le fauteuil.  |
| The carpet.   | Le tapis.     |
| The curtain.  | Le rideau.    |
| The picture.  | Le tableau.   |
| The portrait. | Le portrait.  |
| The bust.     | Le buste.     |
| The present.  | Le présent.   |
| The gift.     | Le cadeau.    |
| The treasure. | Le trésor.    |
| The coffin.   | Le cercueil.  |
| The stick.    | Le bâton.     |
| The cane.     | La canne.     |
| The parasol.  | Le parasol.   |
| The umbrella. | Le parapluie. |
| The satin.    | Le satin.     |
| The velvet.   | Le velours.   |
| The tarsenet. | Le taffetas.  |
| The knot.     | Le nœud.      |
| The veil.     | Le voile.     |
| The comb.     | Le peigne.    |

See Exercise 21st.

## TWENTY-SECOND LESSON.—*Vingt-deuxième leçon.*

Some—any, (before a verb.)  
Have you any money?  
I have some.

En.  
Avez-vous de l'argent?  
J'en ai.

Where a noun, which has been expressed in the question, is omitted in the answer, *some* is expressed by *en*, which comes between the verb and its nominative.

Has the merchant any good money?  
Yes, he has some.

} Le négociant a-t-il de bon or ?  
Oui, il en a.

*En* is used also for expressing *some* or *any*, when the noun to which it refers has been expressed in a previous sentence or in the first clause of a sentence.

I have had a great deal of gold. | J'ai eu beaucoup d'or.

A great deal of = much, many.  
My father has had a great deal too.

Has he had much ?

Yes, he has had a great deal.

Enough of.

Has your neighbours' merchant had much velvet ?

He has had enough.

He has had velvet enough.

Yes, he has had enough.

Beaucoup de.

Mon père en a eu beaucoup aussi.

En a-t-il eu beaucoup ?

Oui, il en a eu beaucoup.

Assez de.

Le marchand de vos voisins a-t-il eu beaucoup de velours ?

Il en a eu assez.

Il a en assez de velours.

Oui, il en a eu assez.

*Enough*, in English, generally follows the word which it qualifies. In French it precedes the noun, and is taken with the preposition *de*: *assez de velours*—*enough of velvet*.

It follows the indefinite *en*: *j'en ai assez*—*I have enough of it*.

But it precedes the adjective without taking *de*.

My brother is good enough.

Have you good trees enough ?

Yes, I have enough.

Is your uncle good ?

Yes, he is good enough.

The almond.

Red currants.

White currants.

The fig.

The filbert.

White gooseberry.

Red gooseberry.

Grapes.

Hazel-nut.

Apple,

Orange.

The peach.

The pear.

The plum.

The medlar.

Mon frère est assez bon.

Avez-vous assez de bons arbres ?

Oui, j'en ai assez.

Votre oncle est-il bon ?

Oui, il est assez bon.

L'amande, *f*.

Groseilles rouges en grappes, *f*.

Groseilles blanches en grappes, *f*.

La figue.

L'aveline, *f*.

La groseille blanche.

La groseille rouge.

Le raisin.

La noisette.

La pomme.

L'orange, *m*.

La pêche.

La poire.

La prune.

Le nêfle.

## TWENTY-THIRD LESSON.—*Vingt-troisième leçon.*

Have you any medlars ?  
 I have not any.  
 I have not any medlars.

Avez-vous des nèfles ?  
 Je n'en ai pas.  
 Je n'ai pas de nèfles.

It will be seen from the second of the above examples that *en* in a negative sentence is placed between the *ne* and the verb.

In the third, that in *not any*—*no* the preposition *de* is used without the article.

Thus, for *some—any*, we have—

Before a noun, *De—de l'. De la. Des.*

Before an adjective, *De.*

After a negation, *De.*

Referring to a noun previously expressed, *En.*

I have some meat, have you any?

No, I have not any meat.

I have some good meat, but I have some bad sugar also.

How much ? How many ?

How much meat have you ?

I have enough.

Too much. Too many.

I have too much meat, but I have not sugar enough.

The cake, pie.

Puff-paste.

Fritter.

Dinner.

The dessert.

The ham.

The roast meat.

The boiled meat.

The pork.

The honey.

The fish.

The poison.

The suet.

The breakfast.

The supper.

J'ai de la viande, en avez-vous ?

Non, je n'ai pas de viande.

J'ai de bonne viande, mais j'ai aussi de mauvais sucre.

Combien de ?

Combien de viande avez-vous ?

J'en ai assez.

Trop de.

J'ai trop de viande, mais je n'ai pas assez de sucre.

Le gâteau.

Le feuilletage.

La beigne.

Le diner.

Le dessert.

Le jambon.

Le rôti.

Le bouilli.

Le lard.

Le miel.

Le poisson.

Le poison.

Le suif.

Le déjeuné.

Le souper.

The milk.  
The soup.  
The vermicelli.  
The slice.  
The morsel.  
The soap.

Le lait.  
Le bouillon.  
Les vermicelles.  
La tranche.  
La bouchée.  
Le savon.

See Exercise 23rd.

## TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON.—*Vingt-quatrième leçon.*

Do you wish for? Will you?  
Do you wish for some milk?  
I wish for some milk.  
Does your father wish for some cheese?  
He wishes for some.  
We wish for some wood, but we do not wish for any iron.  
I wish.  
Thou wishest.  
He wishes.  
We wish.  
You wish.  
They wish.  
Do our neighbours wish for any money?  
Yes, they wish for some, and they wish for some gold also.  
Little.

Voulez-vous?  
Voulez-vous du lait?  
Je veux du lait.  
Votre père veut-il du fromage?  
Il en veut.  
Nous voulons du bois, mais nous ne voulons pas de fer.  
Je veux.  
Tu veux.  
Il veut.  
Nous voulons.  
Vous voulez.  
Ils veulent.  
Nos voisins veulent-ils de l'argent?  
Oui, ils en veulent, et ils veulent de l'or aussi.  
Peu.

*Peu* before a noun takes *de*, like *beaucoup*, *assez*, &c.

Little meat.  
A little wood.  
Does the shoemaker wish for a little leather?  
He wishes for a little.

Peu de viande.  
Un peu de bois.  
Le cordonnier veut-il un peu de cuir?  
Il en veut un peu.

It has been seen that *en* is used for *some*, *any*, when the noun is omitted. It will be seen from the last example that it is used also to refer to a noun previously expressed, even where *some* and *any* cannot be used in English.

My cousin wishes for a little copper; what does yours wish for?

Mine wishes for a little copper also, but our uncles wish for a great deal.

The compass.

The pencil.

The seal.

The parchment.

The painter's pencil.

The die.

The dollar.

The cent.

The franc.

The thread.

The scissors.

The plane.

The cask.

The bellows.

The tongs.

The shovel.

The pot.

The bucket.

The caldron.

The brush.

Mon cousin veut un peu de cuivre; le vôtre que veut-il?

Le mien veut un peu de cuivre aussi, mais nos oncles en veulent beaucoup.

Le compas.

Le crayon.

Le cachet.

Le parchemin.

Le pinceau.

Le dé.

La gourde.

Le centime.

Le franc.

Le fil.

Les ciseaux.

Le rabot.

Le tonneau.

Le soufflet.

Les pincettes.

La pelle.

Le pot.

Le seau.

Le chaudron.

La brosse.

See Exercise 24th.

## TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON.—*Vingt-cinquième Leçon.*

To speak.

To buy.

To steal.

Parler.

Acheter.

Voler.

There are four conjugations in French. The first has its infinitive in *er*.

Desire.

Have you a desire to speak?

I have a desire to speak.

Has the merchant a desire to buy some wood?

He has a desire to buy some.

Remember that *en* is placed directly before the verb.

*L'envie, f.* Envie de.

Avez-vous envie de parler?

J'ai envie de parler.

Le marchand a-t-il envie d'acheter du bois?

Il a envie d'en acheter.



The mason wishes to buy some plaster, and the carpenter wishes to buy some too.

To.

Does the cabinetmaker wish to speak to my father?

He does not wish to speak to your father, but he wishes to speak to your uncle.

Why?

Why does he not wish to speak to my father?

To him.

He does not wish to speak to him because he is afraid to speak to him.

Because.

Why does the shoemaker wish to buy some leather?

He wishes to buy some because he needs some.

To have need of. To need.

The need.

Has the merchant need of this leather?

No, he has no need of it, and he does not wish to buy any of it.

To cut.

To tear.

To break.

To deceive.

Le mason veut acheter du plâtre et le charpentier veut en acheter aussi.

A.

Le menuisier veut-il parler à mon père?

Il ne veut pas parler à votre père, mais il veut parler à votre oncle.

Pourquoi?

Pourquoi ne veut-il pas parler à mon père?

Lui.

Il ne veut pas lui parler parcequ'il a peur de lui parler.

Parceque.

Le cordonnier pourquoi veut-il acheter du cuir?

Il veut en acheter parcequ'il en a besoin.

Avoir besoin de.

Le besoin.

Le marchand a-t-il besoin de ce cuir?

Non, il n'en a pas besoin, et il ne veut pas en acheter.

Couper.

Déchirer.

Casser.

Tromper.

See Exercise 25th.

## TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON.—*Vingt-sixième leçon.*

Upon, (above.)

Under, (below.)

Is our good neighbour's cat on the roof?

Dessus.

Dessous.

Le chat de notre bon voisin est-il sur le toit?

No, he is under the table.

Is it on it ?

No, it is under it.

There.

Non, il est sous la table.

Est-il dessus ?

Non, il est dessous.

Y.

Observe particularly the cases in which *y* answers to the English *there*.

Is it there ?

No, it is not there.

To go.

Where does the merchant wish to go ?

Somewhere.

He wishes to go somewhere.

Does he wish to go somewhere ?

No, he does not wish to go anywhere.

Nowhere—not anywhere.

Does he wish to go there ?

He does not wish to go there

At—to—in, (one's house.)

To—at the merchant's.

To—at my father's.

Do you wish to go to my father's ?

I do not wish to go to your father's, but I wish to speak to your father.

Y est-il ?

Non, il n'y est pas.

Aller.

Le marchand où veut-il aller ?

Quelque part.

Il veut aller quelque part.

Veut-il aller quelque part ?

Non, il ne veut aller nulle part.

Nulle part.

Veut-il y aller ?

Il ne veut pas y aller.

Chez.

Chez le marchand.

Chez mon père.

Voulez-vous aller chez mon père ?

Je ne veux pas aller chez votre père, mais je veux parler à votre père.

Be careful to distinguish between *chez*—*at*, or *to the house*, *store*, &c., and *à*—*to*.

To create.

To save.

To govern.

To form.

To cultivate.

To civilize.

To invent—to forge.

To plant.

To sow.

To reap.

To fish.

To carry.

Créer.

Sauver.

Gouverner.

Former.

Cultiver.

Civiliser.

Forger.

Planter.

Semer.

Moissonner.

Pêcher.

Porter.

To lead.  
To meet.  
To remove.  
To raise—lift up.  
To carry off.  
To elevate.

Mener.  
Rencontrer.  
Eloigner.  
Lever.  
Enlever.  
Elever.

See Exercise 26th.

## TWENTY-SEVENTH LESSON.—*Vingt-septième leçon.*

Some. A few.  
He has some books, but he has not many.

A few, some.  
Has he my knives?  
He has some.

Has he many?

Several.  
He has several.

Several men have knives, but my poor cousin has not any.

Quelques.  
Il y a quelques livres, mais il n'en a pas beaucoup.

Quelques-uns—unes.  
A-t-il beaucoup de couteaux?  
Il en a quelques-uns.  
En a-t-il beaucoup?

Plusieurs.  
Il en a plusieurs.

Plusieurs hommes ont des couteaux, mais ma pauvre cousine n'en a pas.

Observe that the *des* is not translated.

To love.  
I love.  
Thou lovest.  
He loves.  
We love.  
You love.  
They love.

Aimer.  
J'aime.  
Tu aimes.  
Il aime.  
Nous aimons.  
Vous aimez.  
Ils aiment.

In every verb there are two parts; the *root* or stem syllable, and the inflection ending, or syllable which is added to express the accidents of person, number, &c. In the first conjugation, the inflection—ending of the infinitive is *er*; consequently the root is what remains after dropping *er*—*aimer*, *aim*. The last letter of the root is called the characteristic of the verb. Now, to form the other tenses, you have only to add the tense-ending to the root. For the ind. pres.

|                                   |                                     |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>sing.</i> 1st pers. <i>-e.</i> | <i>plur.</i> 1st pers. <i>-ons.</i> |
| 2d <i>-es.</i>                    | 2d <i>-ez.</i>                      |
| 3d <i>-e.</i>                     | 3d <i>-ent.</i>                     |
| To speak, to talk.                | Parl- <i>er.</i>                    |
| I speak.                          | Je parl- <i>e.</i>                  |
| Thou speakest.                    | Tu parl- <i>es.</i>                 |
| He speaks.                        | Il parl- <i>e.</i>                  |
| We speak.                         | Nous parl- <i>ons.</i>              |
| You speak.                        | Vous parl- <i>ez.</i>               |
| They speak.                       | Ils parl- <i>ent.</i>               |

Most French verbs take either *de* or *à* before another verb, and in learning verbs the scholar must take care to learn at the same time with which of these two prepositions they are used. The English Inf. has *to* always with it and belonging to it. The French has no such thing: it is complete in itself; and consequently *aimer* means *to love*; *parler*, *to speak*.

My father loves to speak.

Mon père aime à parler.

Mine loves to speak also.

Le mien aime à parler aussi.

See Exercise 27th.

## TWENTY-EIGHTH LESSON.—*Vingt-huitième leçon.*

Loved.

Aimé, *m.* Aimée, *f.*

The past participle of the first conjugation is formed by adding *é*, *m*, and *ée* (*fem.*) to the root,

To quit.  
To take away.  
To throw away.  
To draw.  
To cut.  
To wound.  
To drive away.  
To kill.  
To spoil.  
To pay. To pay for.  
To gain.  
To possess.  
To wager.  
To keep.

Quitter—quitté.  
Oter.  
Jeter.  
Tirer.  
Tailler.  
Blesser.  
Chasser.  
Tuer.  
Gâter.  
Payer.  
Gagner.  
Posséder.  
Gager.  
Garder.

|                               |                                    |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| To wash.                      | Laver.                             |
| To wet.                       | Mouiller.                          |
| To deck.                      | Parer.                             |
| A wager.                      | Une gageure.                       |
| The debt.                     | La dette.                          |
| The sentiment.                | Le sentiment.                      |
| The honour.                   | L'honneur.                         |
| Has this man paid his debts ? | Cet homme a-t-il payé ses dettes ? |
| Yes, he has paid them.        | Oui, il les a payés.               |

The past participle, conjugated with *avoir*, does not follow the gender and number of its subject.

But, if the object is expressed by a *le, la, les*, or *que*, referring to some word previously mentioned, the past participle takes the gender and number of that word.

|                                           |                                         |
|-------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| Have you given your gloves to my father ? | Avez-vous donné vos gants à mon père ?  |
| Yes, I have given them to him.            | Oui, je les lui ai donnés.              |
| Have you given him many gloves ?          | Lui avez-vous donné beaucoup de gants ? |

Observe the position of *lui*—to him.

|                              |                                |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| But, only.                   | Ne—que.                        |
| I have given him only a few. | Je ne lui en ai donné que peu. |

*Ne*, followed by *que* after the verb or participle, is used to express *but only*.

|                                                                        |                                              |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| Have you broken several glasses for him, (of his.)                     | Lui avez-vous cassé plusieurs verres ?       |
| No, I have broken only a few for him.                                  | Non, je ne lui en ai cassé que quelques-uns. |
| Here the <i>lui</i> must be translated for <i>him</i> —of <i>his</i> . |                                              |

See Exercise 28th.

## TWENTY-NINTH LESSON.—*Vingt-neuvième leçon.*

The infinitive of the second conjugation ends in *ir*.

|            |                               |
|------------|-------------------------------|
| To finish. | Fin-ir. Past part. fin-i. ie, |
|------------|-------------------------------|

In English there are three forms of the present—

I finish (common.)  
 I am finishing (progressive.)  
 I do finish, (emphatic,)

In French there is but one form for all three and we must say *je finis* for I finish, or I am finishing, or I do finish. The present participle and auxiliary are never united as in the progressive form.

|                                  |                                  |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| I finish.                        | Je fin-is.                       |
| Thou finishest.                  | Tu fin-is.                       |
| He finishes.                     | Il fin-it.                       |
| We finish.                       | Nous fin-i-ssons.                |
| You finish.                      | Vous fin-i-ssez.                 |
| They finish.                     | Ils fin-i-ssent.                 |
| The exercise.                    | Le thème.                        |
| The lesson.                      | La leçon.                        |
| I am finishing my exercise : are | Je finis mon thème : finissez-   |
| you finishing yours ?            | vous le votre ?                  |
| I have already finished it.      | Je l'ai déjà fini.               |
| Already.                         | Déjà.                            |
| Have you finished your lesson ?  | Avez-vous fini votre leçon ?     |
| Yes, I have already finished it. | Oui, je l'ai déjà finie.         |
| One more.                        | Encore un.                       |
| Do you wish to finish one more   | Voulez-vous finir encore un      |
| exercise ?                       | thème ?                          |
| Yes, I wish to finish one more.  | Oui, je veux en finir encore un. |

It will be observed here, also, that the noun which is omitted is referred to by *en*.

|                                  |                                |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| To do—to make.                   | Faire—fait, <i>pp</i> .        |
| Do you wish to make another      | Voulez-vous faire un autre ha- |
| coat ?                           | bit ?                          |
| Other.                           | Autre—autres.                  |
| Another.                         | Un autre —une autre.           |
| I wish to make another.          | Je veux en faire un autre.     |
| Has this woman done her exer-    | Cette femme a-t-elle fait son  |
| cise ?                           | thème ?                        |
| No, another has done it for her. | Non, une autre le lui a fait.  |
| Of what other woman do you       | De quelle autre femme parlez-  |
| speak ?                          | vous ?                         |

I speak of *the one who* has done  
her exercise.

To warn—inform of.

To heal.

To bury.

To unite.

To tarnish.

To embellish.

To soften—sweeten.

To punish.

To enrich.

The happiness.

The misfortune.

The miracle.

The case.

The sex.

The kind.

The price.

Je parle de *celle qui* a fait son  
thème.

Avertir.

Guérir.

Ensevelir.

Unir.

Ternir.

Embellir.

Adoucir.

Punir.

Enrichir.

Le bonheur.

Le malheur.

Le miracle.

Le cas.

Le sex.

Le genre.

Le prix.

See Exercise 29th.

### THIRTIETH LESSON.—*Trentième leçon.*

I do.

Thou doest.

He does.

We do.

You do.

They do.

Are you doing other exercises?

I am doing some others.

Is your cousin doing some others?

He is not doing any others.

Have you any other books?

I have not many more.

Not many more.

I have not many more books.

As much, many—as.

Je fais.

Tu fais.

Il fait.

Nous faisons.

Vous faites.

Ils font.

Faites-vous d'autres thèmes?

J'en fais d'autres.

Votre cousin en fait-il d'autres?

Il n'en fait pas d'autres.

Avez-vous encore d'autres livres?

Je n'en ai plus guère.

Ne—plus guère.

Je n'ai plus guère de livres.

Autant de—que de.

|                                                                              |                                                                                   |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Have you as many books as my father ?                                        | Avez-vous autant de livres que mon père ?                                         |
| I have as many books as your father, but I have not as many as your brother. | J'ai autant de livres que votre père, mais je n'en ai pas autant que votre frère. |

Let the student's attention be called again to the use of the *en* in the last phrase.

|                      |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| As many as I.        | Autant que moi.       |
| As many as thou.     | Autant que toi.       |
| As many as he.       | Autant que lui.       |
| As many as we.       | Autant que nous.      |
| As many as you.      | Autant que vous.      |
| As many as they.     | Autant qu'eux.        |
| As many as she—they. | Autant qu'elle—elles. |

Let it be remembered that the forms *je, tu, il, ils*, are used only as immediate nominatives with the verb expressed. In all other cases, *I, thou, he, they*, are rendered by *moi, toi, lui, eux*.

|                                          |                                                 |
|------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|
| Do you wish to buy as much wood as I ?   | Voulez-vous acheter autant de bois que moi ?    |
| No, I do not wish to buy as much as you. | Non, je ne veux pas en acheter autant que vous. |
| Do you wish to buy much more ?           | Voulez-vous en acheter encore beaucoup ?        |
| I do not wish to buy much more.          | Je ne veux en acheter plus guère.               |
| The pleasure.                            | Le plaisir.                                     |
| The courage.                             | Le courage.                                     |
| The zeal.                                | Le zèle.                                        |
| The defect.                              | Le défaut.                                      |
| The vice.                                | Le vice.                                        |
| The crime.                               | Le crime.                                       |
| The state.                               | L'état,                                         |
| The obstacle.                            | L'obstacle.                                     |
| The advantage.                           | L'avantage.                                     |
| The age.                                 | L'âge.                                          |
| The mind—wit.                            | L'esprit.                                       |

See Exercise 30th.



# THIRTY-FIRST LESSON.—*Trente-et-unième* *leçon.*

The infinitive of the third conjugation ends in *oir*.

To receive. Received.

I receive.

Thou receivest.

He received.

We receive.

You receive.

They receive.

To see. Seen.

I see.

Thou seest.

He sees.

We see.

You see.

They see.

Have you seen this man?

I have seen him, but I do not  
see him any longer.

No more, no longer.

Do you still receive books?

I do not receive any more.

To whom?

To whom do you wish to  
speak?

I wish to speak to this man.

Do you wish to speak to him?

No, I wish to speak to you.

From—of whom?

Of whom do you speak?

I speak of you.

From whom do you receive  
books?

I receive some from you and  
from your brother also.

Recevoir, *pp.* Regu—ue.

Je reçois.

Tu reçois.

Il reçoit.

Nous recevons.

Vous recevez.

Ils reçoivent.

Voir. Vu—vue.

Je vois.

Tu vois.

Il voit.

Nous voyons.

Vous voyez.

Ils voient.

Avez-vous vu cette homme?

Je l'ai vu, mais je ne le vois  
plus.

Ne—plus.

Recevez-vous encore des li-  
vres?

Je n'en reçois plus.

A qui?

A qui voulez-vous parler?

Je veux parler à cette homme.

Voulez-vous parler à lui?

Non, je veux parler à vous.

De qui?

De qui parlez-vous?

Je parle de vous.

De qui recevez-vous des li-  
vres?

J'en reçois de vous et de votre  
frère aussi.

It will be seen that the French have but one word, *de*, for *of*  
and *from*.

|                                        |                                 |                       |
|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------------|
| To the, <i>m.</i>                      | Au, ( <i>sing.</i> )            | Aux, ( <i>plur.</i> ) |
| To the, <i>f.</i>                      | À la.                           |                       |
| To whom are you carrying these shoes?  | À qui portez-vous ces souliers? |                       |
| I am carrying them to the } shoemaker. | Je les porte au cordonnier.     |                       |
| The interest.                          | L'intérêt.                      |                       |
| The pride.                             | L'orgueil.                      |                       |
| The danger.                            | Le danger.                      |                       |
| The peril.                             | Le péril.                       |                       |
| The punishment.                        | Le supplice.                    |                       |
| The disorder.                          | Le désordre.                    |                       |
| The order.                             | L'ordre.                        |                       |
| The design.                            | Le dessein.                     |                       |
| The leisure.                           | Le loisir.                      |                       |
| The respect.                           | Le respect.                     |                       |
| The caprice.                           | Le caprice.                     |                       |
| The art.                               | L'art.                          |                       |
| The love.                              | L'amour.                        |                       |
| The goodness.                          | La bonté.                       |                       |

See Exercise 31st.

### THIRTY-SECOND LESSON.—*Trente-deuxième leçon.*

The present participle always ends in *ant*.

|             |            |           |                 |
|-------------|------------|-----------|-----------------|
| To love.    | Loving.    | Aimer.    | Aimant, 1 conj. |
| To finish.  | Finishing. | Finir.    | Finissant.      |
| To receive. | Receiving. | Recevoir. | Recevant.       |
| To see.     | Seeing.    | Voir.     | Voyant.         |

In the first conjugation it can be formed directly by adding *ant* to the root.

In the second by dropping *r* and adding *ssant* to the union vowel *i*.

All the variations from these rules will be marked separately.

The *pp.* of the third conj. will be given in full.

|              |             |            |            |
|--------------|-------------|------------|------------|
| To conceive. | Conceiving. | Concevoir. | Concevant. |
|              | Conceived.  |            | Conçu.     |

|                                              |                                                     |
|----------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| I conceive.                                  | Je conçois.                                         |
| Thou conceivest.                             | Tu conçois.                                         |
| He conceives.                                | Il conçoit.                                         |
| We conceive.                                 | Nous concevons.                                     |
| You conceive.                                | Vous concevez.                                      |
| They conceive.                               | Ils conçoivent.                                     |
| To owe. Owing. Owed.                         | Devoir. Devant. Dû-e.                               |
| I owe, (ought.)                              | Je dois.                                            |
| Thou owest.                                  | Tu dois.                                            |
| He owes.                                     | Il doit.                                            |
| We owe.                                      | Nous devons.                                        |
| You owe.                                     | Vous devez.                                         |
| They owe.                                    | Ils doivent.                                        |
| To be able. Being able. }<br>Been able. }    | Pouvoir. Pouvant. Pu.                               |
| I am able, (can.)                            | Je peux. Je puis.                                   |
| Thou canst.                                  | Tu peux.                                            |
| He can.                                      | Il peut.                                            |
| We can.                                      | Nous pouvons.                                       |
| You can.                                     | Vous pouvez.                                        |
| They can.                                    | Ils peuvent.                                        |
| To you. To me.                               | Vous. Me.                                           |
| Can you tell me how much this man owes you ? | Pouvez-vous me dire combien cette homme vous doit ? |
| I can, (tell you.)                           | Je peux, (vous le dire.)                            |

It has been seen that, where a noun is understood, the French take pains to refer to it by means of *en*, which in this case is either partitive or refers to the indirect object. For the same purpose of clearness and precision the pronoun *le* is used to refer to the direct object, and even to an entire preposition : so that we must take care, in answering a question, not to say as in English. Je peux vous dire—I can tell you ; but, Je peux vous *le* dire—I can tell *it* you.

|                                                         |                                                                                          |
|---------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| I cannot tell <i>you</i> , but I can tell<br>my father. | }   Je ne peux pas le dire <i>à vous</i> ,<br>mais je peux le dire <i>à mon</i><br>père. |
|---------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

Wherever a distinction is made between persons, or particular stress laid upon them, *to you*, *to me*, *to him*, are expressed by *à vous*, *à moi*, *à lui*, which then follow the verb. In all other cases the form *vous*, *me*, *lui*, is used, and placed before the verb.

|              |                 |
|--------------|-----------------|
| Beauty.      | La beauté.      |
| Health.      | La santé.       |
| Fidelity.    | La fidélité.    |
| Piety.       | La piété.       |
| Sincerity.   | La sincérité.   |
| Sensibility. | La sensibilité. |
| Docility.    | La docilité.    |
| Simplicity.  | La simplicité.  |
| Vivacity.    | La vivacité.    |
| Gayety.      | La gaieté.      |
| Artlessness. | La naïveté.     |

See Exercise 32nd.

### THIRTY-THIRD LESSON.--*Trente-troisième leçon*

|                                                    |   |                                                            |
|----------------------------------------------------|---|------------------------------------------------------------|
| To foresee. Foreseeing.                            | } | Prévoir. Prévoyant. Prévu-e.                               |
| Foreseen.                                          |   | (Ind. p like voir.)                                        |
| To know (how.)                                     | } | Savoir.                                                    |
| Knowing (how.)                                     |   | Sachant.                                                   |
| Known (how.)                                       |   | Su e.                                                      |
| I know (how.)                                      |   | Je sais.                                                   |
| Thou knowest (how.)                                |   | Tu sais.                                                   |
| He knows (how.)                                    |   | Il sait.                                                   |
| We know (how.)                                     |   | Nous savons.                                               |
| You know (how.)                                    |   | Vous savez.                                                |
| They know (how.)                                   |   | Ils savent.                                                |
| That, (conjunction.)                               |   | Que.                                                       |
| Do you know that my brother is arrived?            |   | Savez-vous que mon frère est arrivé ?                      |
| Yes, I know it ; but is your mother arrived also ? |   | Oui, je le sais ; mais votre mère est-elle arrivée aussi ? |
| She is not yet arrived.                            |   | Elle n'est pas encore arrivée.                             |

When the past participle is conjugated with a form of the verb *to be—être*, it agrees with its subject in gender and number.

|                                          |                                                 |
|------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|
| As—as.                                   | Aussi—que.                                      |
| Has your brother been as diligent as I ? | Votre frère a-t-il été aussi diligent que moi ? |

|                                                      |                                                                     |
|------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|
| He has been as diligent as you.                      | Il a été aussi diligent que vous.                                   |
| Is this pencil as good as yours?                     | Ce crayon est-il aussi bon que le votre?                            |
| It is not as good as mine, but it is much handsomer. | Il n'est pas aussi bon que le mien, mais il est beaucoup plus beau. |
| More than.                                           | Plus de—que.                                                        |
| Have you had more meat than I?                       | Avez-vous eu plus de viande que moi?                                |
| I have had more than you.                            | J'en ai eu plus que vous.                                           |
| Does your father speak as much as you?               | Votre père parle-t-il autant que vous?                              |
| He does not speak as much as I, but he knows more.   | Il ne parle pas autant que moi, mais il sait davantage.             |
| More.                                                | Davantage.                                                          |

Plus expresses a comparison, davantage implies one: the former expresses it in a direct, the latter in an indirect manner, and should be placed at the end of a clause or sentence.

|                                           |                                                         |
|-------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------|
| Is your ribbon as fine as your brother's? | Votre ruban est-il aussi beau que celui de notre frère. |
| It is more so.                            | Il l'est davantage.                                     |
| It is finer.                              | Il est plus beau.                                       |

Observe the *P* in the first phrase, and compare Obs. Less. 35.

|                          |                  |
|--------------------------|------------------|
| Truth.                   | La vérité.       |
| Cowardice.               | La lâcheté.      |
| Neatness.                | La propreté.     |
| Slovenliness—dirtyiness. | La mal-propreté. |
| Wickedness.              | La méchanceté.   |
| Friendship.              | L'amitié.        |
| Pride.                   | La fierté.       |
| Pity.                    | La pitié.        |
| Lightness.               | La légèreté.     |
| Frivolousness.           | La frivolité.    |
| Frivolous.               | Frivole.         |
| Idleness.                | L'oisiveté.      |

See Exercise 33rd.

# THIRTY-FOURTH LESSON.—*Trente-quatrième Leçon.*

Verbs of the fourth conjugation end in *re*.

To render, restore—*ing, ed.*

I restore.

Thou restorest.

He restores.

We restore.

You restore.

They restore.

To wait for.

To hear.

To suspend.

To sell.

To defend.

To confound.

To spread.

To answer.

To shear.

To twist.

Have you more meat than bread?

Less than.

I have less meat than bread.

I have less than you.

Quite—just as much, many.

I have quite as much bread as they.

Both.

Have you my book or my cane?

I have both.

Have you my books or my canes?

I have neither.

Neither.

To be, being, been.

To have, having, had.

Rendre—rendant, rendu, *ue.*

Je rends.

Tu rends.

Il rend.

Nous rendons.

Vous rendez.

Ils rendent.

Attendre.

Entendre.

Suspendre.

Vendre.

Défendre.

Confondre.

Répandre.

Répondre.

Tondre.

Tordre.

Avez-vous plus de viande que de pain?

Moins de—que.

J'ai moins de viande que de pain.

J'en ai moins que vous.

Tout autant.

J'ai tout autant de pain qu'eux.

L'un et l'autre—l'une et l'autre.

Avez-vous mon livre ou mon bâton?

J'ai l'un et l'autre.

Avez-vous mes livres ou mes bâtons?

Je n'ai ni les uns ni les autres.

Ni l'un ni l'autre.

Etre—étant—été.

Avoir—ayant—eu.

|                                        |             |                          |                |
|----------------------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|----------------|
| The bigness.                           | Big, great. | La grandeur.             | Grand, grande. |
| The thickness.                         | Thick.      | La grosseur.             | Gros, grosse.  |
| The length.                            | Long.       | La longueur.             | Long, longue.  |
| The width.                             | Wide.       | La largeur.              | Large.         |
| The height.                            | High.       | La hauteur.              | Haut.          |
| The weight.                            | Weighty.    | La pesanteur.            | Pesant.        |
| Slowness.                              | Slow.       | La lenteur.              | Lent.          |
| Coldness.                              | Cold.       | La froideur.             | Froid.         |
| Freshness.                             | Fresh.      | La fraîcheur.            | Frais.         |
| Paleness.                              | Pale.       | La pâleur.               | Pâle.          |
| Redness.                               | Red.        | La rougeur.              | Rouge.         |
| Blackness.                             | Black.      | La noirceur.             | Noir.          |
| The value.                             |             | La valeur.               |                |
| Candour.                               | Candid.     | La candeur.              | Candide.       |
| Modesty.                               |             | La pudeur.               |                |
| Sweetness.                             | Sweet.      | La douceur.              | Doux.          |
| The flavour.                           |             | La faveur.               |                |
| Fury.                                  | Furious.    | La fureur.               | Furieux.       |
| The French ( <i>man or language.</i> ) |             | Le Français.             |                |
| English                                | "           | L'Anglais.               |                |
| Italian                                | "           | L'Italien.               |                |
| Spanish                                | "           | L'Espagnol.              |                |
| German                                 | "           | L'Allemand.              |                |
| Portuguese                             | "           | Le Portugais.            |                |
| Russian                                | "           | Le Russe.                |                |
| Polish                                 | "           | Le Polonais.             |                |
| Greek                                  | "           | Le Grec.                 |                |
| Latin                                  | "           | Le Latin.                |                |
| Hebrew                                 | "           | L'Hébreu.                |                |
| Do you speak French ?                  |             | Parlez-vous Français ?   |                |
| No, but I am learning it.              |             | Non, mais je l'apprends. |                |

Observe the omission of the article after *parler*.

|                                                 |                                                  |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| Do you know how to write }<br>French ?          | Savez-vous écrire le Français ?                  |
| I know how to write French and<br>read Italian. | Je sais écrire le Français et lire<br>l'Italien. |

It will be seen that *to know how* is translated by *savoir*.

Observe in the following phrases the difference between *savoir* and *connaître*.

|                      |                          |
|----------------------|--------------------------|
| Do you know French ? | Savez-vous le Français ? |
| Yes, I know it.      | Oui, je le sais.         |

|                                          |                                             |
|------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| Do you know the Frenchman ?              | Connaissez-vous le Français ?               |
| Yes, I know him.                         | Oui, je le connais.                         |
| Do you know your lesson ?                | Savez-vous votre leçon ?                    |
| Yes, I know it.                          | Oui, je la sais.                            |
| Do you know my friend ?                  | Connaissez-vous mon ami ?                   |
| Yes, I know him.                         | Oui, je le connais.                         |
| Which of these two lessons do you know ? | Laquelle de ces deux leçons savez-vous ?    |
| I know this one.                         | Je sais celle-ci.                           |
| Which of these two men do you know ?     | Lequel de ces deux hommes connaissez-vous ? |
| I know that one.                         | Je connais celui-là.                        |
| Do you want this book ?                  | Avez-vous besoin de ce livre ?              |
| I do not know.                           | Je ne sais pas.                             |
| Do you want my brothers ?                | Avez-vous besoin de mes frères ?            |
| I want them.                             | J'ai besoin d'eux.                          |

Here we might say *j'en ai besoin* ; but, in speaking of persons, it is better to make use of the personal pronoun.

|                             |                                   |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Of what ?                   | De quoi ?                         |
| What does this man want ?   | De quoi cet homme a-t-il besoin ? |
| He does not want any thing. | Il n'a besoin de rien.            |
| Matrimony—marriage.         | Le mariage.                       |
| Celibacy.                   | Le célibat.                       |
| Bachelor.                   | Le gargon.                        |
| The portion.                | La dot.                           |
| Wedding.                    | Les noces, <i>f.</i>              |
| Christening.                | Le baptême.                       |
| Nurse.                      | La nourrice.                      |
| Nurse (of the sick.)        | La garde-malade.                  |
| Orphan.                     | L'orphelin.                       |

See Exercise 34th.

### THIRTY-FIFTH LESSON—*Trente-cinquième leçon*

I shall love, will love.

Aimer-ai.

The future of the first conjugation is formed by adding *ai* to the infinitive.



|                                                      |                                                           |
|------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| I shall, wil' love.                                  | J'aimerai.                                                |
| Thou wilt love.                                      | Tu aimeras.                                               |
| He will love.                                        | Il aimera.                                                |
| We will love.                                        | Nous aimerons.                                            |
| You will love.                                       | Vous aimerez.                                             |
| They will love.                                      | Ils aimeront.                                             |
| When ?                                               | Quand ?                                                   |
| When will you love your lessons ?                    | Quand aimerez-vous vos leçons ?                           |
| I shall love them when you love yours.               | Je les aimerai quand vous aimerez les vôtres.             |
| I shall have.                                        | J'aurai.                                                  |
| Thou shalt have.                                     | Tu auras.                                                 |
| He shall have.                                       | Il aura.                                                  |
| We shall have.                                       | Nous aurons.                                              |
| You shall have.                                      | Vous aurez.                                               |
| They shall have.                                     | Ils auront.                                               |
| When shall you have as many buttons as I ?           | Quand aurez-vous autant de boutons que moi ?              |
| I shall have as many as you when you have some more. | J'en aurai autant que vous quand vous en aurez davantage. |
| To-morrow.                                           | Demain.                                                   |
| Day after to-morrow.                                 | Après-demain.                                             |
| Yesterday.                                           | Hier.                                                     |
| Day before yesterday.                                | Avant hier.                                               |
| The next day.                                        | Le lendemain.                                             |
| This month.                                          | Ce mois.                                                  |
| Next month.                                          | Le mois prochain.                                         |
| This week.                                           | Cette semaine.                                            |
| Next week.                                           | La semaine prochain.                                      |
| Last.                                                | Passé.                                                    |
| Last month.                                          | Le mois passé.                                            |
| Last week.                                           | La semaine passée.                                        |

The comparative degree is formed by adding *plus*, to the positive, which in most adjectives remains unchanged.

|                                                            |                                                      |
|------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| My book is big, but yours is bigger.                       | Mon livre est grand, mais le vôtre est plus grand.   |
| My hat is smaller than yours.                              | { Mon chapeau est plus petit que le vôtre.           |
| I have a handsome book, but you will have a handsomer one. | J'ai un beau livre, mais vous en aurez un plus beau. |

|             |             |
|-------------|-------------|
| Drunk.      | Ivre.       |
| Sour.       | Aigre.      |
| Lean.       | Maigre.     |
| Clean.      | Propre.     |
| Tender.     | Tendre.     |
| Dirty.      | Mal-propre. |
| Neutral.    | Neutre.     |
| Celebrated. | Célèbre.    |
| Rural.      | Champêtre.  |
| Earthly.    | Terrestre.  |
| Severe.     | Sévère.     |
| Necessary.  | Nécessaire. |
| Rare.       | Rare.       |
| Avaricious. | Avare.      |
| Empty.      | Vide.       |
| Rapid.      | Rapide.     |

See Exercise 35th.

### THIRTY-SIXTH LESSON.—*Trente-sixième leçon.*

The future of the second conjugation is formed by adding *ai* to the infinitive.

|                                                                            |                                                                           |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| I shall finish my lessons to-morrow : when will you finish yours?          | Je finirai mes leçons demain : quand finirez-vous les vôtres ?            |
| As soon as.                                                                | Aussitôt.                                                                 |
| I shall finish them as soon as I can.                                      | Je les finirai aussitôt que je pourrai.                                   |
| I shall be.                                                                | Je serai.                                                                 |
| Thou shalt be.                                                             | Tu seras.                                                                 |
| He shall be.                                                               | Il sera.                                                                  |
| We shall be.                                                               | Nous serons.                                                              |
| You shall be.                                                              | Vous serez.                                                               |
| They shall be.                                                             | Ils seront.                                                               |
| Contented, glad.                                                           | Content.                                                                  |
| Will you be glad to see the good books which your father has brought you ? | Serez-vous content de voir les bons livres que votre père vous a portés ? |

|                                                                                                       |                                                                                                           |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| I shall be very glad to see them,<br>but I shall be still more glad<br>to give them to my good sister | Je serai très content de les voir,<br>mais je serai encore plus content<br>de les donner à ma bonne sœur. |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

The superlative degree is formed by prefixing the definite article to the comparative.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Will you have the handsomest of<br>all these books ?<br>I shall have the handsomest of<br>these, but your cousin will have<br>a handsomer one than mine.<br>Damp.<br>Liquid.<br>Perfidious.<br>Timid.<br>Solid.<br>Sick.<br>Commodious.<br>Incommodious.<br>Sad.<br>Just.<br>Modest.<br>Civil-honest.<br>Uncivil.<br>Firm.<br>Savage.<br>Fertile.<br>Sterile.<br>Fragile.<br>Useful.<br>Useless. | Aurez-vous le plus beau de tous<br>ces livres ?<br>J'aurai le plus beau de ceux-ci,<br>mais votre cousin en aura un<br>plus beau que le mien.<br>Humide.<br>Liquide.<br>Perfide.<br>Timide.<br>Solide.<br>Malade.<br>Commode.<br>Incommode.<br>Triste.<br>Juste.<br>Modeste.<br>Honnête.<br>Mal-honnête.<br>Ferme.<br>Sauvage.<br>Fertile.<br>Stérile.<br>Fragile.<br>Utile.<br>Inutile. |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

See Exercise 26th.

### THIRTY-SEVENTH LESSON.—*Trente-septième Leçon.*

Verbs of the 4th conjugation form their future by changing the final *e* into *ai*, &c.

I will return you your books  
when you return me mine.

In order to.

Why do you go so often to my  
father's ?

So often.

I go to your father's to see your  
sister.

Business—affaires.

Do you go to his house in order  
to speak to him about your  
affairs ?

No, I go to his house to speak to  
him about his.

I shall go.

Thou shalt go.

He shall go.

We shall go.

You shall go.

They shall go.

Shall you go to my father's ?

To-morrow morning.

Yes, I shall go to his house to-  
morrow morning.

Shall you be at home this even-  
ing ?

Before.

No, I shall not be at home before  
to-morrow morning.

To lose. Losing. Lost.

To sell. Selling. Sold.

To hear.

To wait for.

To forbid.

To give back.

To confound.

To interrupt.

To take.

To understand.

Je vous rendrai vos livres  
quand vous me rendrez les  
miens.

Pour.

Pourquoi allez-vous si souvent  
chez mon père ?

Si souvent.

Je vais chez votre père pour  
voir votre sœur.

Les affaires, *f*.

Allez-vous chez lui pour lui  
parler de vos affaires ?

Non, je vais chez lui pour lui  
parler des siennes.

J'irai.

Tu iras.

Il ira.

Nous irons.

Vous irez.

Ils iront.

Irez-vous chez mon père ?

Demain matin.

Oui, j'irai chez lui demain  
matin.

Serez-vous chez-vous ce soir ?

Avant.

Non, je ne serai pas chez moi  
avant demain matin.

Perdre. Perdant. Perdu.

Vendre. Vendant. Vendu.

Entendre, -ant, -u.

Attendre, -ant, -u.

Défendre, -ant, -u.

Rendre, -ant, -u.

Confondre, -ant, -u.

Interrompre, -ant, -u.

Prendre.

Comprendre.

All the verbs in the above list form the ind. pres. by changing  
the *re* of the infinitive into

1st pers. *sing.* -s,  
2nd -s,

1st pers. *plur.* -ons.  
2nd -ez.  
3rd -ent.

and dropping it for the third person singular.

I lose.  
Thou loiest.  
He loses.  
We lose.  
You lose.  
They lose.  
The thing.  
Fortune.  
Thought.  
Memory.  
Country.  
Peace.  
War.

Je perds.  
Tu perds.  
Il perd.  
Nous perdons.  
Vous perdez.  
Ils perdent.  
La chose.  
La fortune.  
La pensée.  
La mémoire.  
La patrie.  
La paix.  
La guerre.

See Exercise 37th.

### THIRTY-EIGHTH LESSON.—*Trente-huitième leçon.*

I shall come.  
Thou wilt come.  
He will come.  
We will come.  
You will come.  
They will come.

Will you come to my house to-morrow ?

If.

Yes, I will come to your house }  
if your brother will come to }  
mine in the afternoon.

In the afternoon.

I shall be able.

Thou wilt be able.

He will be able.

Je viendrai.  
Tu viendras.  
Il viendra.  
Nous viendrons.  
Vous viendrez.  
Ils viendront.

Viendrez-vous chez moi de-  
main ?

Si.

Oui, je viendrai chez vous si  
votre frère viendra chez moi  
dans l'après-midi.

Dans l'après-midi.

Je pourrai.

Tu pourras.

Il pourra.

We will be able.  
 You will be able.  
 They will be able.  
 He will not be able to come to  
 your house in the afternoon, but  
 he will come in the morning.  
 In the morning.  
 In the evening.  
 Why does he not wish to come  
 this evening. }

Nous pourrons.  
 Vous pourrez.  
 Ils pourront.  
 Il ne pourra pas venir chez vous  
 dans l'après-midi, mais il y  
 viendra le matin.  
 Le matin.  
 Le soir.  
 Pourquoi ne veut-il pas venir  
 ce soir ?

The absolute superlative is expressed by one of the adverbs  
*très, fort, bien, very; extrêmement, extremely; infiniment, in-*  
*finitely.*

A very fine book.  
 This man is exceedingly rich. }  
 To have something to do.  
 What have you to do ?  
 I have a great deal to do; I have  
 two letters to write.

The city.  
 The capital.  
 The street.  
 The square.  
 The meat-market.  
 The column.  
 The bell.  
 The dormant-window.  
 The window.  
 The coach-house.  
 The cabin.  
 The cottage.  
 The barn.  
 The farm.  
 The manger.  
 The door.  
 The kitchen.  
 The chamber.  
 The library.  
 The church.  
 The school.

Un très beau livre.  
 Cet homme est extrêmement  
 riche.

Avoir à faire.  
 Qu'avez-vous à faire ?  
 J'ai beaucoup à faire: j'ai à  
 écrire deux lettres.

La ville.  
 La capitale.  
 La rue.  
 La place.  
 La boucherie.  
 La colonne.  
 La cloche.  
 La lucarne.  
 La fenêtre.  
 La remise.  
 La cabane.  
 La chaumière.  
 La grange.  
 La ferme.  
 La crèche.  
 La porte.  
 La cuisine.  
 La chambre.  
 La bibliothèque.  
 L'église, *f.*  
 L'école, *f.*

# THIRTY-NINTH LESSON.—*Trente-neuvième leçon.*

|                                                                   |                                                             |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|
| To say. Saying. Said.—To tell, &c.                                | Dis. Disant. Dit.                                           |
| I say.                                                            | Je dis.                                                     |
| Thou sayest.                                                      | Tu dis.                                                     |
| He says.                                                          | Il dit.                                                     |
| We say.                                                           | Nous disons.                                                |
| You say.                                                          | Vous dites.                                                 |
| They say.                                                         | Ils disent.                                                 |
| Will you tell me what you have to do?                             | Voulez-vous me dire ce que vous avez à faire ?              |
| I will say,—tell.                                                 | Je dirai.                                                   |
| Thou wilt say.                                                    | Tu diras.                                                   |
| He will say.                                                      | Il dira.                                                    |
| We will say.                                                      | Nous dirons.                                                |
| You will say.                                                     | Vous direz.                                                 |
| They will say.                                                    | Ils diront.                                                 |
| I will tell you very willingly.                                   | Je vous le dirai très volontiers.                           |
| Very willingly.                                                   | Très volontiers.                                            |
| Have you told your brother to come and see me to-morrow morning ? | Avez-vous dit à votre frère de venir me voir demain matin ? |
| I told him to come and see you to-morrow afternoon.               | Je lui ai dit de venir vous voir demain dans l'après-midi.  |
| The hour—o'clock.                                                 | L'heure.                                                    |
| What o'clock.                                                     | Quelle heure ?                                              |
| What o'clock is it ?                                              | Quelle heure est-il ?                                       |
| It is one o'clock.                                                | Il est une heure.                                           |
| It is two o'clock. ♦                                              | Il est deux heures.                                         |
| Half.                                                             | Demi-ie.                                                    |
| It is half-past one.                                              | Il est une heure et demie.                                  |

When *demi* follows the noun, it agrees with it in gender ; when it precedes it, it remains unchanged.

Has it struck twelve.

To strike.

It is going to strike twelve,

Half an hour.

Midi est-il sonné ?

Sonner. (être.)

Midi va sonner.

Une demi-heure.

|                                                                                                |                                                                                |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| To remain. Remaining. Re-<br>mained. }                                                         | Rester. Restant. Resté.                                                        |
| Do you wish to remain long at<br>your father's ?                                               | Voulez-vous rester long-temps<br>chez votre père ?                             |
| Long.                                                                                          | Long-temps.                                                                    |
| I wish to remain there half an<br>hour.                                                        | Je veux y rester une demi-<br>heure.                                           |
| How long do you wish to re-<br>main there ?                                                    | Combien de temps voulez-vous<br>y rester ?                                     |
| I do not wish to remain there long                                                             | Je n'y resterai pas long-temps.                                                |
| To wish. Wishing. Wished.                                                                      | Vouloir. Voulant. Voulu.                                                       |
| I shall wish.                                                                                  | Je voudrai.                                                                    |
| Thou wilt wish.                                                                                | Tu voudras.                                                                    |
| He will wish.                                                                                  | Il voudra.                                                                     |
| We will wish.                                                                                  | Nous voudrons.                                                                 |
| You will wish.                                                                                 | Vous voudrez.                                                                  |
| They will wish.                                                                                | Ils voudront.                                                                  |
| Will your cousin wish to come<br>with us ?                                                     | Votre cousin voudra-t-il venir<br>avec nous ?                                  |
| With.                                                                                          | Avec.                                                                          |
| He will not wish (be willing) to<br>come with us, because he<br>wishes to go with your sister. | Il ne voudra pas venir avec<br>nous, parcequ'il veut aller<br>avec votre sœur. |
| The minute.                                                                                    | La minute.                                                                     |
| The moment.                                                                                    | Le moment.                                                                     |
| The instant.                                                                                   | L'instant.                                                                     |
| The day.                                                                                       | Le jour.                                                                       |
| Daybreak.                                                                                      | La pointe de jour.                                                             |
| Dawn.                                                                                          | L'aurore—l'aube du jour                                                        |
| Sunrise.                                                                                       | Le lever du soleil.                                                            |
| Sunset.                                                                                        | Le coucher du soleil.                                                          |
| Night.                                                                                         | La nuit.                                                                       |
| Noon. At noon.                                                                                 | Le midi. A midi.                                                               |
| Midnight.                                                                                      | Le minuit.                                                                     |
| The year.                                                                                      | L'an.                                                                          |
| The quarter.                                                                                   | Le quartier.                                                                   |
| The century.                                                                                   | Le siècle.                                                                     |
| The time.                                                                                      | Le temps.                                                                      |
| Eternity.                                                                                      | L'éternité.                                                                    |

See Exercise 39th.



FORTIETH LESSON.—*Quarantième leçon.*

| To write. Writing. Written.                  | Ecrire. Ecrivant. Ecrit.                                         |
|----------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------|
| I write.                                     | J'écris.                                                         |
| Thou writest.                                | Tu écris.                                                        |
| He writes.                                   | Il écrit.                                                        |
| We write.                                    | Nous écrivons.                                                   |
| You write.                                   | Vous écrivez.                                                    |
| They write.                                  | Ils écrivent.                                                    |
| I shall write.                               | J'écrirai.                                                       |
| Thou wilt write.                             | Tu écriras.                                                      |
| He will write.                               | Il écrira.                                                       |
| We will write.                               | Nous écrirons.                                                   |
| You will write.                              | Vous écrirez.                                                    |
| They will write.                             | Ils écriront.                                                    |
| Shall you write to your father to-morrow ?   | Ecrirez-vous à votre père demain ?                               |
| No, sir, for I wrote to him twice last week. | Non, monsieur, car je lui ait écrit deux fois la semaine passée. |
| For. Because.                                | Car.                                                             |
| Once, twice, &c.                             | Une fois, deux fois, &c.                                         |
| Have you written to him twice ?              | Lui avez-vous écrit deux fois ?                                  |
| Only—but.                                    | Ne—que.                                                          |

*Only—but* is expressed in French by *ne* before the verb and *que* after it. This form deserves particular attention, for the *que* is sometimes separated by several words from the *ne*.

| I have written to him only once. | Je ne lui ai écrit qu'une fois.                       |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| To intend. Intending. Intended.  | Compter. Comptant. Compté.                            |
| I intend.                        | (No preposition after <i>compter</i> .)<br>Je compte. |
| Thou intendest.                  | Tu comptes.                                           |
| He intends.                      | Il compte.                                            |
| We intend.                       | Nous comptons.                                        |
| You intend.                      | Vous comptez.                                         |
| They intend.                     | Ils comptent.                                         |
| I shall intend.                  | Je compterai.                                         |
| Thou wilt intend.                | Tu compteras.                                         |
| He will intend.                  | Il comptera.                                          |

|                                                        |                                                           |
|--------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| We shall intend.                                       | Nous comptérons.                                          |
| You shall intend.                                      | Vous compterez.                                           |
| They shall intend.                                     | Ils compteront.                                           |
| Soon.                                                  | Bientôt.                                                  |
| Do you intend to go to your un-<br>cle's soon ?        | Comptez-vous aller bientôt<br>chez votre oncle ?          |
| I intend to go there soon : will<br>you come with me ? | Je compte y aller bientôt : y<br>viendrez-vous avec moi ? |
| I shall be very glad to go with<br>you                 | Je serai très content d'y aller<br>avec vous.             |
| And my uncle will be very glad<br>to see you.          | Et mon oncle sera fort content<br>de vous voir.           |
| Spring.                                                | Le printemps.                                             |
| Summer.                                                | L'été.                                                    |
| Autumn.                                                | L'automne.                                                |
| Winter.                                                | L'hiver.                                                  |
| The season.                                            | La saison.                                                |
| The earth.                                             | La terre.                                                 |
| The fire.                                              | Le feu.                                                   |
| The water.                                             | L'eau, <i>f</i> .                                         |
| The air.                                               | L'air, <i>m</i> .                                         |
| The sun.                                               | Le soleil.                                                |
| The moon.                                              | La lune.                                                  |
| The star.                                              | L'étoile, <i>f</i> .                                      |

See Exercise 40th.

## FORTY--FIRST LESSON.—*Quarante-unième leçon.*

Whenever the stem-syllable of the first conjugation ends in *g*, an *e* is inserted in all those forms in which the *g* would be regularly followed by an *a* or an *o*.

|                        |                            |
|------------------------|----------------------------|
| To eat. Eating. Eaten. | Manger. Mang-e-ant. Mangé. |
| I eat.                 | Je mange.                  |
| Thou eatest.           | Tu manges.                 |
| He eats.               | Il mange.                  |
| We eat.                | Nous mangeons.             |
| You eat.               | Vous mangez.               |
| They eat.              | Ils mangent.               |

When the root ends in *c*, the *c* takes a small mark, called *cedilla* (*ç*), in all those forms in which it is regularly followed by *a*, *o* or *u*.

To place. Placing. Placed.  
We put our clothes upon the table; where do you put yours?  
We put them under it.

To put. Putting. Put.

I put.

Thou puttest.

He puts.

We put.

You put.

They put.

I shall put.

Thou shalt put.

He shall put.

We shall put.

You shall put.

They shall put.

In the country.

What does your father intend to do in the country?

He intends to amuse himself there

To amuse one's self.

Placer. Plaçant. Placé.  
Nous mettons nos habits sur la table; où mettez-vous les vôtres?  
Nous les mettons dessous.

Mettre, *-ant*. Mis.

Je mets.

Tu mets.

Il met.

Nous mettons.

Vous mettez.

Ils mettent.

Je mettrai.

Tu mettras.

Il mettra.

Nous mettrons.

Vous mettrez.

Ils mettront.

A la compagnie.

Votre père que compte-t-il faire à la compagnie?

Il compte s'y amuser.

S'amuser.

In French, the reflexive pronoun *self* precedes the infinitive. But, whenever there is a *y* or an *en* in the sentence, it is placed between the reflexive and the verb.

How—with what?

How does he intend to amuse himself there?

He intends to amuse himself with reading and writing.

Amuse himself with reading and writing! What is he thinking of?

A quoi?

{ A quoi compte-t-il s'y amuser?

Il compte s'y amuser à lire et à écrire.

S'amuser à lire et à écrire! A quoi pense-t-il?

The infinitive is sometimes used in English as an exclamation, but then the *to* is generally dropped. It is used in the same way in French, but without any change of form, as will be seen by the preceding phrase.

|                   |             |
|-------------------|-------------|
| To think of.      | Penser à.   |
| To assuage.       | Soulanger.  |
| To avenge.        | Venger.     |
| To load—to charge | Charger—de. |
| To menace.        | Menacer.    |
| To exercise.      | Exercer.    |
| To correct.       | Corriger.   |
| To interrogate    | Interroger. |
| To pronounce.     | Prononcer.  |
| To judge.         | Juger.      |
| To arrange.       | Ranger.     |
| To derange.       | Déranger.   |

See Exercise 41st.

### FORTY-SECOND LESSON.—*Quarante-deuxième leçon.*

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| To send. Sending. Sent. | Envoyer, -ant, -é. |
| I send.                 | J'envoie.          |
| Thou sendest.           | Tu envoies.        |
| He sends.               | Il envoie.         |
| We send.                | Nous envoyons.     |
| You send.               | Vous envoyez.      |
| They send.              | Ils envoient.      |

In verbs ending in *ayer*, *oyer*, *uyer*, the letter *y* is changed into *i*, whenever, in the course of inflection, it would be followed by an *e* mute.

|                            |                    |
|----------------------------|--------------------|
| To sweep. Sweeping. Swept. | Balayer, -ant, -é. |
| I sweep.                   | Je balaie.         |
| Thou sweepest.             | Tu balaies.        |
| He sweeps.                 | Il balaie.         |
| We sweep.                  | Nous balayons.     |
| You sweep.                 | Vous balayez.      |
| They sweep.                | Ils balaient.      |
| I shall sweep.             | Je balaierai.      |
| Thou shalt sweep.          | Tu balaieras.      |
| He shall sweep.            | Il balaiera.       |
| We shall sweep.            | Nous balaierons.   |
| You shall sweep.           | Vous balaieriez.   |
| They shall sweep.          | Ils balaieront.    |
| I shall send.              | J'enverrai.        |

|                                                |                                                          |
|------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| Thou shalt send.                               | Tu enverras.                                             |
| He shall send.                                 | Il enverra.                                              |
| We shall send.                                 | Nous enverrons.                                          |
| You shall send.                                | Vous enverrez.                                           |
| They shall send.                               | Ils enverront.                                           |
| Have you swept your room ?                     | { Avez-vous balayé votre chambre ?                       |
| I never sweep it, but my servant has swept it. | Je ne la balaie jamais, mais mon domestique l'a balayée. |
| Never.                                         | Jamais.                                                  |
| To do, (make.) Doing. Done.                    | Faire. Faisant. Fait.                                    |
| I do.                                          | Je fais.                                                 |
| Thou doest.                                    | Tu fais.                                                 |
| He does.                                       | Il fait.                                                 |
| We do.                                         | Nous faisons.                                            |
| You do.                                        | Vous faites.                                             |
| They do.                                       | Ils font.                                                |
| I shall do.                                    | Je ferai.                                                |
| Thou shalt do.                                 | Tu feras.                                                |
| He shall do.                                   | Il fera.                                                 |
| We shall do.                                   | Nous ferons.                                             |
| You shall do.                                  | Vous ferez.                                              |
| They shall do.                                 | Ils feront.                                              |
| What shall you do to-morrow ?                  | Que ferez-vous demain ?                                  |
| I shall not do any thing : what shall you do ? | Je ne ferai rien : et vous, que ferez-vous ?             |
| Observe the repetition of the <i>vous</i> .    |                                                          |
| I shall amuse myself as well as I can.         | { Je m'amuserai de mon mieux.                            |
| As well as I can.                              | De mon mieux.                                            |

The reflexive pronouns are the accusatives of the three persons of the personal pronouns placed before the verb.

|                        |                                  |
|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| I amuse myself.        | Je m'amuse.                      |
| Thou amusest thyself.  | Tu t'amuses.                     |
| He amuses himself.     | Il s'amuse.                      |
| We amuse ourselves.    | Nous nous amusons.               |
| You amuse yourselves.  | Vous vous amusez.                |
| They amuse themselves. | Ils s'amusent.                   |
| At home.               | Au logis. A la maison.           |
| Is M. B. at home ?     | Monsieur B. est-il à la maison ? |
| Yes, sir, he is.       | Oui, monsieur, il y est.         |

|                                                                                                  |   |                                                                                                       |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| To fatigue. Fatiguing.                                                                           | } | Fatiguer, -ant, -é.                                                                                   |
| Fatigued.                                                                                        |   |                                                                                                       |
| Why does he stay at home so long?                                                                |   | Pourquoi reste-t-il si longtemps à la maison?                                                         |
| So much, so long.                                                                                |   | Tant. Si long-temps.                                                                                  |
| Because he is too much fatigued to go out.                                                       |   | Parcequ'il est trop fatigué pour sortir.                                                              |
| Now.                                                                                             |   | A present.                                                                                            |
| He does not wish to go out now, but, if you will wait a little, he will soon be ready to go out. |   | Il ne veut pas sortir à présent, mais, si vous voulez attendre un peu, il sera bientôt prêt à sortir. |
| Ready to.                                                                                        |   | Prêt à.                                                                                               |
| Are you ready to start?                                                                          |   | Etes-vous prêt à partir?                                                                              |
| I am not ready yet, but I shall be soon.                                                         |   | Je ne suis pas encore prêt, mais je le serai bientôt.                                                 |

See Exercise 42nd.

### FOURTY-THIRD LESSON.—*Quarante-troisième leçon.*

|                                      |                                            |
|--------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| Whose?                               | A qui?                                     |
| Whose hat is this?                   | A qui est ce chapeau-ci?                   |
| It is mine; but that is my father's. | C'est à moi; mais celui-là est à mon père. |

Two things are to be observed in these phrases: first, that the idea of *property* is expressed by the *preposition à*.

Second, that the *demonstrative pronoun ce* is, by a peculiarity of the French language, used with the verb *être*, instead of the personal pronoun *il*—*il*.

|                                     |                                  |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Who sees the enemy?                 | Qui voit l'ennemi?               |
| It is I.                            | C'est moi.                       |
| Who gave you this hat.              | Qui vous a donné ce chapeau?     |
| It was my father who gave it to me. | C'est mon père qui me l'a donné. |

We can say in French, *il est à moi*, but *c'est à moi* is more elegant. But, whenever the verb *to be* is followed by a noun or pronoun, as in the two last examples, we must translate *it* by *ce*.

Observe, too, the use of the present, *c'est mon père*, where we say, *it was my father*.

The body.  
The member—limb.  
The head.  
The hair.  
The face.  
The forehead.  
The features.  
The eye.  
The eyebrow.  
The eyelid.  
The eyeball.  
The nose.  
The cheek.  
The lip.  
The mouth.  
The tooth.  
The throat.  
The ear.  
The temple.  
The arm.  
The elbow.  
The wrist.  
The finger.  
The hand.  
The nail.  
The back.  
Size—the waist.  
The foot.  
The leg.  
The knee.

Le corps.  
Le membre.  
La tête.  
Les cheveux, *m*.  
Le visage—la figure.  
Le front.  
Les traits.  
L'œil, *m*. Les yeux, *pl*.  
Le sourcil.  
La paupière.  
La prunelle de l'œil.  
Le nez.  
La joue.  
La lèvre.  
La bouche.  
La dent.  
Le gosier.  
L'oreille, *f*.  
La tempe.  
Le bras.  
Le coude.  
Le poignet.  
Le doigt.  
La main.  
L'ongle, *m*.  
Le dos.  
La taille.  
Le pied.  
La jambe.  
Le genou.

Is this woman's hair black?

Yes, her hair is black, and her eyes black also.

{ Cette femme a-t-elle les cheveux noirs?  
{ Oui, elle a les cheveux noirs, et les yeux noirs aussi.

Observe in these phrases the use of the *definite article*, where in English we should use the *possessive pronoun* and *possessive case*.

See Exercise 43d.

# FORTY-FOURTH LESSON.—*Quarante-quatrième leçon.*

The imperfect is formed from the present participle by changing *ant* into

-ais, 1 *sing.*  
-ais, 2,  
-ait, 3.

-ions, 1 *plur.*  
-iez, 2,  
-aient, 3.

1. *Parl-ant.*  
Je parl-ais.  
Tu parl-ais.  
Il parl-ait.  
Nous parl-ions.  
Vous parl-iez.  
Ils parl-aient.

2. *Fin-i-ss-ant.*  
Je fini-ss-ais.  
Tu fini-ss-ais.  
Il fini-ss-ait.  
Nous fini-ss-ions.  
Vous fini-ss-iez.  
Ils fini-ss-aient.

3. *Recev-ant.*  
Je recev-ais.  
-ais.  
-ait.  
-ions.  
-iez.  
-aient.

4. *Vend-ant.*  
Je vend-ais.  
-ais.  
-ait.  
-ions.  
-iez.  
-aient.

What were you doing yesterday when I saw you?  
I was planting peas.  
To plant.  
The pea.

Que faisiez-vous hier quand je vous ai vu?  
Je plantais des pois.  
Planter.  
Le pois.

Whenever we use the *active participle* with the *imperfect tense* of the verb *to be*, the French use the *imperfect* of the *principal verb* without the *auxiliary*.

Did you write your father often when he was in the country?  
I wrote every day.

Ecriviez-vous souvent à votre père quand il était à la campagne?  
Je lui écrivais tous les jours.

Whenever an act is spoken of as *habitual*, we must use the *imperfect*. It must be used, therefore, whenever we can employ the word *used to*, or any other that signifies the habit of *being* or *doing*.

Usually.

Ordinairement.



|                   |                        |
|-------------------|------------------------|
| To knit.          | Tricoter.              |
| To chat.          | Causer.                |
| To weep.          | Pleurer.               |
| Satin.            | Le satin.              |
| Gauze.            | Le gaze.               |
| Crape.            | Le crêpe.              |
| Velvet.           | Le velours.            |
| Muslin.           | La mousseline.         |
| Linen.            | La toile.              |
| Cambric.          | L'indienne, <i>f</i> . |
| White linen.      | La toile blanche.      |
| Coarse linen.     | La toile écrue.        |
| Lace.             | La dentelle.           |
| Calico.           | Le calicot.            |
| Doubtful.         | Douteux.               |
| Natural.          | Naturel.               |
| Just.             | Juste.                 |
| Surprising.       | Surprenant.            |
| Astonishing.      | Etonnant.              |
| Proper, suitable. | Convenable.            |
| Essential.        | Essentiel.             |
| Useful.           | Utile.                 |
| Indispensable.    | Indispensable.         |

See Exercise 44th.

## FORTY-FIFTH LESSON — *Quarante-cinquième leçon.*

I would do it if I could. | Je le ferais si je pouvais.

The conditional is formed from the future.

### FUTURE.

|                |              |
|----------------|--------------|
| I shall do.    | Je ferai.    |
| Thou shalt do. | Tu feras.    |
| He shall do.   | Il fera.     |
| We shall do.   | Nous ferons. |
| You shall do.  | Vous ferez.  |
| They shall do. | Ils feront.  |

### CONDITIONAL.

|                  |            |
|------------------|------------|
| I would do.      | Je ferais. |
| Thou wouldst do. | Tu ferais. |
| He would do.     | Il ferait. |

|                                                         |                                                     |
|---------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| We would do.                                            | Nous ferions.                                       |
| You would do.                                           | Vous feriez.                                        |
| They would do.                                          | Ils feraient.                                       |
| Would you go there if I was going.                      | { Y iriez-vous si j'y allais ?                      |
| Yes, I would go there very willingly if you were going. | { Oui, j'y irais très volontiers si vous y alliez.  |
| Towards. { physically.                                  | Vers.                                               |
| { morally.                                              | Envers.                                             |
| Is this man coming towards us ?                         | Cet homme vient-il vers nous ?                      |
| Yes, he is coming towards us.                           | Oui, il vient vers nous.                            |
| To behave—conduct one's self.                           | Se comporter.                                       |
| Does your brother behave well towards his friends ?     | Votre frère se comporte-t-il bien envers ses amis ? |
| He behaves well towards everybody.                      | Il se comporte bien envers tout le monde.           |
| Everybody.                                              | Tout le monde.                                      |
| What have you that is handsome ?                        | Qu'avez-vous de beau.                               |
| I have a beautiful bottle of wine.                      | J'ai une belle bouteille de vin.                    |
| And I have a beautiful wine bottle.                     | Et, moi, j'ai une belle bouteille à vin.            |

Observe the use of the two forms of *l*; the first is emphatic, the second a simple nominative, and both should be used in phrases of this kind, where one person is emphatically distinguished from another.

Observe, too, the use of the preposition *de* and *d* between two substantives; the *de* to express the substance of which the first substantive is made or which it contains—the *d*, the use to which it is applied.

|              |                          |
|--------------|--------------------------|
| Reason.      | La raison.               |
| Nature.      | La nature.               |
| Peace.       | La paix.                 |
| War.         | La guerre.               |
| Solitude.    | La solitude.             |
| Strange.     | Etrange.                 |
| Afflicting.  | Affligeant.              |
| False.       | Faux. Fausse, <i>f</i> . |
| Superfluous. | Superflu.                |

Barley.  
To seem.

L'orge, *f.*  
Sembler.

See Exercise 45th.

## FORTY-SIXTH LESSON.—*Quarante-sixième leçon.*

In all the conjugations, but the third, the present subjunctive is formed from the present participle by changing *ant* into *e*, and adding for the persons the terminations.

e, es, e—ions, iez, ent.

|                              |                       |                      |                     |
|------------------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|---------------------|
| Que je parl- <i>e</i> .      | Finiss- <i>e</i> .    | Reçoiv- <i>e</i> .   | Vend- <i>e</i> .    |
| Que tu parl- <i>es</i> .     | Finiss- <i>es</i> .   | Reçoiv- <i>es</i> .  | Vend- <i>es</i> .   |
| Qu'il parl- <i>e</i> .       | Finiss- <i>e</i> .    | Reçoiv- <i>e</i> .   | Vend- <i>e</i> .    |
| Que nous parl- <i>ions</i> . | Finiss- <i>ions</i> . | Recev- <i>ions</i> . | Vend- <i>ions</i> . |
| Que vous parl- <i>iez</i> .  | Finiss- <i>iez</i> .  | Recev- <i>iez</i> .  | Vend- <i>iez</i> .  |
| Qu'ils parl- <i>ent</i> .    | Finiss- <i>ent</i> .  | Reçoiv- <i>ent</i> . | Vend- <i>ent</i> .  |

Observe the irregularity in the *singular* and third personal plural of *recevoir*, in which *ev* becomes *oiv*.

Verbs that express a *wish*, *command*, *expectation*, *prohibition*, *doubt*, *permission*, or the like, are followed by *que* with the subjunctive.

|                                                                                     |                                                                                        |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Do you wish me to speak to you ?                                                    | Voulez-vous que je vous parle ?                                                        |
| Yes, I am very desirous that you should speak to me, and tell me that little story. | Oui, je désire fort que vous me parliez, et que vous me contiez cette petite histoire. |
| It is to be desired.                                                                | Il est à désirer.                                                                      |
| It is to be wished.                                                                 | Il est à souhaiter.                                                                    |
| It is to be feared.                                                                 | Il est à craindre.                                                                     |
| What do you say, my friend ?                                                        | Que dites-vous, mon ami ?                                                              |
| I say that it is to be desired that it should be good weather to-morrow.            | } Je dis qu'il est à désirer qu'il fasse beau temps demain.                            |
| That I do or make.                                                                  |                                                                                        |
| That thou dost or makest.                                                           | Que je fasse.                                                                          |
| That he does or makes.                                                              | Que tu fasses.                                                                         |
| That we do or make.                                                                 | Qu'il fasse.                                                                           |
| That you do or make.                                                                | Que nous fassions.                                                                     |
|                                                                                     | Que vous fassiez.                                                                      |

|                               |                                         |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| That they do or make.         | Qu'ils fassent.                         |
| To be fine weather.           | Faire beau temps.                       |
| What kind of weather is it ?  | Quel temps fait-il ?                    |
| It is bad weather.            | Il fait mauvais temps.                  |
| It is necessary, we must.     | Il faut.                                |
| What must be done ?           | Que faut-il faire ?                     |
| We must go to market.         | Il faut aller au marché.                |
| What must we do ?             | Que nous faut-il faire ?                |
| You must set out immediately. | Il faut que vous partiez tout de suite. |
| Immediately.                  | Tout de suite.                          |

In an indefinite phrase, or in a phrase where there can be no doubt about the person who is meant, *il faut* may be used with the infinitive.

|                                                |                                             |
|------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| You must give me that.                         | Il faut que vous me donniez cela.           |
| Ought it not rather to be given to my sister ? | Ne faut-il pas le donner plutôt à ma sœur ? |
| Rather.                                        | Plutôt.                                     |

Here the proposition is stated generally, and, as regards the giver, indefinitely.

|                  |               |
|------------------|---------------|
| Vexed. Sorry.    | Faché.        |
| Goodness.        | La bonté.     |
| Variety.         | La variété.   |
| Play—the game.   | Le jeu.       |
| Vigorous.        | Vigoureux.    |
| To consult.      | Consulter.    |
| The fact—deed.   | Le fait.      |
| To tell—narrate. | Conter.       |
| Adroit.          | Adroit.       |
| Awkward—unhandy. | Maladroit.    |
| Spectacle—show.  | Le spectacle. |
| To animate.      | Animer.       |
| Supple.          | Souple.       |

See Exercise 46th.

## FORTY-SEVENTH LESSON.--*Quarante-septième leçon.*

What do you want ?  
 I want some bread.  
 Do you want much ?  
 Yes, I want several pounds.  
     One pound.

Que vous faut-il ?  
 Il me faut du pain.  
 Vous en faut-il beaucoup ?  
 Oui, il m'en faut plusieurs livres  
     Une livre.

Observe that the literal meaning of the phrase is, "What is wanting or necessary to you?" the personal pronoun and *en* being placed in their usual order before the verb.

To go away.  
 Do you wish to go away ?  
 No, I do not wish to go away,  
     but my two sisters wish to go  
     away.

S'en aller.  
 Voulez-vous vous s'en aller ?  
 Non, je ne veux pas m'en aller,  
     mais mes deux sœurs veulent  
     s'en aller.

In these phrases the adverbial meaning of *en* (inde) is very apparent. It should be rendered by "*away*."

What must I do in order to be  
 able to go away ?  
 You must have your clothes  
 packed.

    To have packed.  
     To have a thing done.  
     To pack.

What are you having done ?  
 As for that I trust to you.  
     To trust to.  
     To advise.

I do not advise you to trust to me,  
 for I do not know any thing  
 about it.

    To know about.  
     However—still.

Your honour, however, is con-  
 cerned in it, (is at stake.)  
 Yours, rather, is at stake.

Que faut-il que je fasse pour  
 pouvoir m'en aller ?  
 Il faut que vous fassiez emballer  
 vos habits.

    Faire emballer.  
     Faire faire une chose.  
     Emballer.

Que faites-vous faire ?  
 Pour cela je m'en rapporte à vous.  
     S'en rapporter à.  
     Conseiller.

Je ne vous conseille pas de vous  
 en rapporter à moi, car je ne  
 m'y connais pas.

    S'y connaître.  
     Pourtant.

Il y va pourtant de votre hon-  
 neur.

Il y va plutôt de la vôtre.

Observe the adverbial use of *y* in the preceding phrases, and compare it well with *y* in its radical meaning of *there*.

To unveil—discover.  
To smother.  
Gratitude.  
The part.  
To furnish.  
The opera.  
The half.  
To run away.

Dévoiler.  
Étouffer.  
La reconnaissance.  
La partie.  
Fournir.  
L'opéra.  
La moitié.  
S'enfuir (de.)

See Exercise 47th.

## FORTY-EIGHTH LESSON.—*Quarante-huitième leçon.*

To agree to—about.  
Do you agree to that?  
No, I do not agree to it.

Do you agree that that is true? }  
I grant you that this is true;  
but still I do not approve  
of it.

One—we—they.

Convenir de.  
Convendez-vous de cela?  
Non, je n'en conviens pas.  
Convendez-vous que cela soit  
vrai?  
Je vous accorde que cela est  
vrai; mais pourtant je ne l'ap-  
prouve pas.  
On.

*On* is an indeterminate pronoun, and is used where, in English, we use *one*, *people*, *we*, or *they* as nominatives in an indefinite sense. In translating from French into English the scholar should be careful to choose the form which corresponds best to the English idiom.

What news is there at your house? Que dit-on de nouveau chez vous?  
There is no news, but we On ne dit rien de nouveau; mais  
are preparing for great chan- on se prépare à de grands  
ges. changements.

Where we should use the passive voice, the French often make use of *on*; and hence, in translating it to English, the student will often find that it makes better English to translate *on* by our passive.

Is that article found in many laws?

Yes, it is found in all laws.

Cette article se trouve-t-il dans beaucoup de lois?

Oui, il se trouve dans toutes les lois.

Here it will be seen that the passive voice is rendered by the reflexive form of the verb. And the student, who compares carefully the cases in which the passive is used in French with those in which it is used in English, will find that the French contrives to avoid it by the use of *on* and the reflexive in a large number of cases, where we are compelled to use it.

To sell.

How does that cloth sell?

It sells at five dollars a yard.

To be satisfied.

Are you contented with what you have got?

Yes, for we must be contented with what we can get.

To apply to.

To whom must we apply, to learn your uncle's address?

We must apply to his son.

Is your uncle easily contented?

Easily.

Hardly ever.

No, he is hardly ever contented with what is done for him.

Se vendre.

Combien ce drap se vend-il?

Il se vend cinq { gourdes l'aune.  
piastres la verge.

Se contenter.

Etes-vous content de ce que vous avez obtenu?

Oui, car il faut se contenter de ce qu'on peut obtenir.

S'adresser à.

À qui faut-il s'adresser pour savoir l'adresse de votre oncle?

Il faut s'adresser à son fils.

Votre oncle se contente-t-il facilement?

Facilement.

Presque jamais.

Non, il ne se contente presque jamais de ce qu'on fait pour lui.

See Exercise 48th.

## FORTY-NINTH LESSON.—*Quarante-neuvième leçon.*

### PERFECT INDICATIVE.

Je parl-ai.

Tu parl-as.

Il parl-a.

Fini-s.

Fini-s.

Fini-t.

Reç-us.

Reç-us.

Reç-ut.

Vend-is.

Vend-is.

Vend-it.

|                 |            |            |             |
|-----------------|------------|------------|-------------|
| Nous parl-âmes. | Finî-mes.  | Reç-ûmes.  | Vend-îmes.  |
| Vous parl-âtes. | Finî-tes.  | Reç-ûtes.  | Vend-îtes.  |
| Ils parl-èrent. | Finî-rent. | Reç-urent. | Vend-irent. |

The *perfect definite* is a narrative tense. It describes a past action as a *single definite* action, that took place at *some* past time, no matter how near or how distant.

|                                                                       |                                                                                   |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| I told.                                                               | Je dis.                                                                           |
| Thou toldest.                                                         | Tu dis.                                                                           |
| He told.                                                              | Il dit.                                                                           |
| We told.                                                              | Nous dîmes.                                                                       |
| You told.                                                             | Vous dites.                                                                       |
| They told.                                                            | Il dirent.                                                                        |
| When did he tell you that ?                                           | Quand vous dit-il cela ?                                                          |
| He told me that last year, and then he told it to me again last week. | Il me dit cela l'année passée, et puis il me le dit de nouveau la semaine passée. |
| Then.                                                                 | Puis.                                                                             |
| Again—anew.                                                           | De nouveau.                                                                       |

But there is no idea of *continuance* or *repetition* in it. Wherever these ideas are to be expressed you must use the *imperfect*.

|                                                                           |                                                               |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------|
| What were you doing yesterday when I came into your room ?                | Que faisiez-vous hier quand j'entrai dans votre chambre ?     |
| I was speaking to my father, who went away as soon as he saw you come in. | Je parlais à mon père, qui s'en alla aussitôt qu'il vous vit. |
| What did you do last evening at my brother's.                             | Que fîtes-vous hier au soir chez mon frère ?                  |
| We sang and danced.                                                       | Nous chantâmes et nous dansâmes.                              |

In speaking of *actions*, the French generally use the *perfect definite* unless they are spoken of as habitual. In speaking of *state*, the *imperfect*.

|               |             |
|---------------|-------------|
| To assist.    | Assister.   |
| To attend.    | Assister à. |
| Cloud.        | Le nuage.   |
| Acorn.        | Le gland.   |
| Oak.          | Le chêne.   |
| To arrive at. | Parvenir à. |





I desired that you should re-  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Je désirais} \\ \text{Je désirai} \end{array} \right\}$  que vous renon-  
nounce this enterprise.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Je désirais} \\ \text{Je désirai} \end{array} \right\}$  siez à cette entre-  
prise.

Here we have the *imperfect* and *perfect indicative* followed by the imperfect subjunctive.

Thus.

|                      |   |                        |
|----------------------|---|------------------------|
| Present indicative.  | } | Present subjunctive.   |
| Future indicative    |   |                        |
| Imperfect indicative | } | Imperfect subjunctive. |
| Perfect indicative   |   |                        |
| To put one's hat on. |   | Se couvrir.            |
| Current.             |   | Courant.               |
| Hurtful.             |   | Nuisible.              |
| To discover.         |   | Découvrir.             |
| Dull weather.        |   | Un temps couvert.      |
| The wall.            |   | La muraille.           |
| The picture.         |   | Le tableau.            |
| To beg.              |   | Prier.                 |
| I beg you to.        |   | Je vous prie de.       |

See Exercise 50th.

## FIFTY-FIRST LESSON.—*Cinquante-et-unième leçon.*

Is gold a useful metal? | L'or est-il un métal utile?

In many cases where the definite article is omitted in English it is used in French.

It is used before the names of metals and materials.

|                                |  |                                        |
|--------------------------------|--|----------------------------------------|
| What is wood good for?         |  | Le bois à quoi sert-il?                |
| To be good for—to be used for. |  | Servir à.                              |
| Wood is used for many things.  |  | Le bois sert à <i>bien des</i> choses. |

Here no particular wood is meant, but every substance, which comes under the head of *wood*, is said to be useful for many things. And thus, when a thing is taken in its collective sense, it must have the article before it.

Observe the use of *des* after *bien*.

Is virtue lovely ?

Yes, and vice is odious.

What ?

What renders woman lovely ? }

Sweetness.

La vertu est-elle aimable ?

Oui, et le vice est odieux.

Qu'est-ce qui ?

*Qu'est-ce qui rend la femme aimable ?*

La douceur.

Here it will be seen that *woman* is taken collectively for the whole sex, and must be rendered *la femme*.

To subdue.

To bound—limit.

Desire.

Firmness—resolution.

Inconvenience.

To obviate.

What do you intend to do to obviate these inconveniences ?

I do not intend to do anything.

Harvest.

Folly.

It is a folly to do nothing ; you ought to think of some remedy.

It is not a folly : for I have already thought of one, and the best remedy is to do nothing.

Credulity.

Difficulty.

The feeling.

Dupe.

Character.

To absolve—acquit.

To dissolve.

Equality.

Strength—force.

Sharpness—sourness.

Dompter.

Borner.

Le désir.

La fermeté.

L'inconvénient.

Obvier à.

Que comptez-vous faire pour obvier à ces inconvénients ?

Je ne compte rien faire.

La récolte.

La folie.

*C'est une folie que de rien faire : vous devriez songer à quelque remède.*

*Ce n'est pas une folie, car j'y ai déjà songé, et le meilleur remède c'est de ne rien faire.*

La crédulité.

La difficulté.

Le sentiment.

Dupe.

Le caractère.

Absoudre.

Dissoudre.

L'égalité.

La force.

L'acreté.

See Exercise 51st.

## FIFTY-SECOND LESSON.—*Cinquante-deuxième leçon.*

England.  
Prussia.  
Russia.  
France.  
America.  
The United States.  
Europe.  
Asia.  
Africa.  
Italy.  
Spain.  
Greece.

L'Angleterre.  
La Prusse.  
La Russie.  
La France.  
L'Amérique.  
Les Etats Unis.  
L'Europe.  
L'Asie.  
L'Afrique.  
L'Italie.  
L'Espagne.  
La Grèce

It will be seen from the above examples that names of countries take the article.

|                                                 |                                             |
|-------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| Which is the most beautiful country in Europe ? | Quel est le plus beau pays de l'Europe ?    |
| Italy is the most beautiful country of Europe.  | L'Italie est le plus beau pays de l'Europe. |

But after *en* the article is omitted.

|                                           |                                                     |
|-------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| In which part of Europe is your brother ? | Dans quelle partie de l'Europe votre frère est-il ? |
| He is in France.                          | Il est en France.                                   |
| Whence do you come ?                      | D'où venez-vous ?                                   |
| I come from France.                       | Je viens de France.                                 |

In speaking of coming from a country, it is more usual to omit the article, though it may be used.

|                                       |                            |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Of what king are you speaking ?       | De quel roi parlez-vous ?  |
| I am speaking of the king of Prussia. | Je parle du roi de Prusse. |

*De* is also often used without the article, when the substantive has no adjective with it.

|                                                 |                                                              |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| Were you ever in the kingdom of Great Britain ? | Avez-vous jamais été dans le royaume de la Grande Bretagne ? |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|

Yes, I have been there very often. } Oui, j'y ai été très souvent.

Here is an adjective, and the article is used.

Do you like French wines ? } Aimez-vous les vins de France ?  
Yes, and Italian wines too. } Oui, et les vins d'Italie aussi.

In those examples the article is omitted, because France and Italy are spoken of generally and without reference to their extent. My meaning is, that I like French and Italian wines generally, though there still may be some among them that I do not like.

Do Italian wines bring in much to government ? } Les vins de l'Italie rapportent-ils beaucoup au gouvernement ?  
Not so much as those of France. } Pas autant que ceux de la France ?

Here we mean all the wines of France and Italy ; the sum total of the revenue raised from them ; and, consequently, the article is used to show that these countries are spoken of definitely and in their full extent.

|                                                                              |                                                                                                   |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Between.                                                                     | Entre.                                                                                            |
| Where is Paraguay ?                                                          | Où est le Paraguay ?                                                                              |
| Paraguay is a vast country of South America between Brazil, Peru, and Chili. | } Le Paraguay est un vaste pays de l'Amérique méridionale entre le Brésil, le Pérou, et le Chili. |
| Germany.                                                                     | L'Allemagne.                                                                                      |
| Austria.                                                                     | L'Autriche                                                                                        |
| Poland.                                                                      | La Pologne.                                                                                       |
| Sweden.                                                                      | La Suède.                                                                                         |
| Denmark.                                                                     | La Danemarck.                                                                                     |

See Exercise 52nd.

FIFTY-THIRD LESSON.—*Cinquante-troisième  
leçon.*

Have you seen my brother ?      { Avez-vous vu mon frère ?  
                                                  { *Est-ce que vous avez vu mon*  
                                                      frère.

Either of the above forms may be used, but the latter is most common.

**Do I speak to deaf men ?      |      Est-ce que je parle à des sourds ?**

**In the first person *est-ce que* is always the best form to use.**

**Have I given you my hat ? } Est-ce que je vous ai donné mon  
chapeau ?**

No, your brother gave it to me.      Non, c'est votre frère qui me l'a donné.

Do I still owe this man some money ?

No, it is your brother who owes him some.      Non, c'est votre frère qui lui en doit.

Is the man of whom I speak  
rich?      Est-ce que l'homme dont je  
parle est riche?

Of whom.

**Yes, but he does not love to speak about the things you spoke to him about.**      **Oui, mais il n'aime pas à parler des choses dont vous lui avez parlé.**

Here it will be seen that *dont* is used for things as well as for persons.

*Of whom* have I spoken?      | *De qui* est-ce que j'ai parlé?

***Dont*** is not used at the beginning of a sentence.

**To dress.**

**Mourning.**

**Because.**

**Why.**

## The harvest.

**To reap.**

## Reaper.

**Towards noon.**

**On purpose.**

**Se vêtir.**

## Le deuil.

**Parceque.**

**Pourquoi.**

## La moisson.

## Moissonner.

**Moissonneur.**

**Vers midi.**

**Exprès.**

## FIFTY-FOURTH LESSON.—*Cinquante-quatrième leçon.*

What are you doing?  
I am eating while writing my exercise.  
And I speak while correcting mine.

Qu'est-ce que vous faites?  
Je mange en écrivant mon thème.  
Et moi je parle en corrigeant le mien.

Observe the use of the preposition *en* before the present participle.

Do you know my uncle?

{ Est-ce que vous connaissez mon oncle?

I know him by sight.

Je le connais de vue.

By sight.

De vue.

He knows you by name.

Il vous connaît de nom.

Did you meet him this morning?

Est-ce que vous l'avez rencontré ce matin?

Yes, I met him at the corner of the street.

Oui, je l'ai rencontré au coin de la rue.

Where is he *then*?

Où *donc* est-ce qu'il est?

Then.

Donc.

I walked *fast* and left him a great way behind.

J'ai marché *vîte* et je l'ai laissé *bien loin* derrière.

Fast

Vîte.

. A great way.

Bien loin.

Behind.

Derrière.

How much did you pay for *that*?  
I paid fifty sous for it.

Combien avez-vous payé cela?  
Je l'ai payé cinquante sous.

Observe that *for* is not translated.

How much did your brother pay for his new hat?

Combien votre frère a-t-il payé chapeau neuf?

He paid twenty francs for it.

Il l'a payé vingt francs.

Troublesome—meddling.

Tracassier.

At first.

D'abord.

Eye-witness.

Un témoin oculaire.

To take leave of.

Prendre congé de.

Goods.

La marchandise, *f.*

See Exercise 54th.

# FIFTY-FIFTH LESSON.—*Cinquante-cinquième leçon.*

Do not weep, I beg of you.

Do not be afraid, I will not weep.

{ *Ne pleurez pas, je vous en prie.*

N'ayez pas peur, je ne pleurerai pas.

In the Imperative mood the pronoun, as will be seen by the above examples, is omitted in the second person.

Let him weep as much as he likes that will not prevent me from doing my duty.

How much does that cost a foot ?

Qu'il pleure tant qu'il *voudra*, cela ne m'empêchera pas de faire mon devoir.

Combien cela coûte-t-il *le* pied ?

Observe the translation of the indefinite *a* by the definite *le*.

I bought those penknives for ten sous a piece.

How much can a good workman earn a day ?

He can earn four francs a day.

Whatever.

Anybody whatever can earn four francs a day.

Do not believe that.

What a fine hat ?

Yes, it is a fine one, but yours is finer still.

Agreeably to custom.

As for my part—me.

To the clouds.

It rains.

It hails.

It snows.

It thunders.

It lightens.

It blows.

J'ai acheté ces canifs dix sous la pièce.

Combien un bon ouvrier peut-il gagner par jour ?

Il peut gagner quatre francs par jour.

Quelconque.

Un homme quelconque peut gagner quatre francs par jour.

Ne croyez pas cela.

Quel beau chapeau ?

Oui, il est beau, mais le vôtre est encore plus beau.

Conformément à l'usage.

Quant à moi.

Jusqu'aux nues.

Il pleut.

Il grêle.

Il neige.

Il tonne.

Il fait des éclairs.

Il fait du vent.

See Exercise 55th.



## FIFTY SIXTH LESSON.—*Cinquante-sixième leçon.*

What a fine book this is ?  
 Yes, that *must* be true, since  
*everybody* says so  
 Since.  
 Just.

What were you saying ?  
 I was saying that I had seen your  
 brother who is just arrived.  
 Whence is he just arrived ?  
 He is just arrived from Boston.  
 Are the things *of which* he was  
 speaking to you, very impor-  
 tant ?

He was speaking to me of one of  
 my friends *whose* brother he  
 knows very well.

Are we not *almost* to the end of  
 these lessons ?

Yes, *there is* the end.

I am *very* glad of it.

Why so ?

Because I would like to begin  
 M. Value's edition of Ollen-  
 dorff.

Do you think it a good one ?

Good ? I believe it to be excel-  
 lent, and infinitely superior to  
 all that has been done hitherto.

Que ce livre est beau ?

Oui, il *faut bien* que se soit vrai,  
 puisque *tout le monde* le dit.

Puisque.

Venir de (*with a verb*)

Que disiez-vous ?

Je disais que j'avais vu votre  
 frère qui vient d'arriver.

D'où vient-il d'arriver ?

Il vient d'arriver de Boston.

Est-ce que les choses, *dont* il  
 vous parlait, sont très impor-  
 tantes ?

Il me parlait d'un de mes amis,  
 dont il connaît très bien le  
 frère

} Est-ce que nous ne sommes  
 pas *presqu'a* la fin de ces le-  
 çons ?

Oui, *voilà* la fin.

J'en suis bien aise.

Pourquoi cela ?

Parceque je *voudrais* bien com-  
 mencer la nouvelle édition d'Oll-  
 endorff faite par M. Value.

La croyez-vous bonne ?

Bonne ? Je la crois excellente, et  
 infiniment supérieure à tout ce  
 qu'on a fait jusqu'ici.

|                                                              |  |                                                                        |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|--|------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| So much the better. I shall be<br>very glad to study it too. |  | l'ant mieux. Je serai <i>fort</i> con-<br>tent de l'étudier moi aussi. |
| Well then, we will begin to-<br>gether.                      |  |                                                                        |
|                                                              |  | Hé bien ! nous commencerons<br><i>donc ensemble.</i>                   |

See Exercise 66th.

## GRAMMATICAL PARADIGMS.

### DEFINITE ARTICLE.

|        |              | SINGULAR.   |  |                                   | PLURAL. |
|--------|--------------|-------------|--|-----------------------------------|---------|
|        |              |             |  | Before vowel<br>or <i>h</i> mute. |         |
|        | <i>Masc.</i> | <i>Fem.</i> |  |                                   |         |
| Nom. } | Le.          | La.         |  | L'.                               | Les.    |
| Acc. } |              |             |  |                                   |         |
| Gen.   | Du, (de le.) | De la.      |  | De l'.                            | Des.    |
| Dat.   | Au, (à le.)  | A la.       |  | A l'.                             | Aux.    |

### PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

|        |     |        |        |      |
|--------|-----|--------|--------|------|
| Nom. } | Du. | De la. | De l'. | Des. |
| Acc. } |     |        |        |      |

### INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

|                |          |   |            |
|----------------|----------|---|------------|
| <i>A, one.</i> | Un, uns. | • | Une, unes. |
|                | D 2      |   |            |

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

## SINGULAR.

|                             | First Person.            | Second Person.             | Third Person.              |                             |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Subject, or Nominative,     | <i>Je, moi,</i> I.       | <i>Tu, toi,</i> thou.      | <i>Il, lui,</i> he.        | <i>Elle,</i> she.           |
| Object indirect in the Gen. | <i>De moi,</i> of me.    | <i>De toi,</i> of thee.    | <i>De lui,</i> of him.     | <i>D'elle,</i> of her.      |
| " " " Dat.                  | <i>Me, à moi,</i> to me. | <i>Te, à toi,</i> to thee. | <i>Lui, à lui,</i> to him. | <i>Lui, à elle,</i> to her. |
| " direct, or Accusative,    | <i>Me, moi,</i> me.      | <i>Te, toi,</i> thee.      | <i>Le, lui,</i> him.       | <i>La, elle,</i> her.       |

## PLURAL.

|                              |                            |                              |                            |                             |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Subject, or Nominative,      | <i>Nous,</i> we.           | <i>Vous,</i> ye or you.      | <i>Ils eux,</i> they.      | <i>Elles,</i> they.         |
| Object indirect in the Gen., | <i>De nous,</i> of us.     | <i>De vous,</i> of you.      | <i>D'eux,</i> of them      | <i>D'elles,</i> of them     |
| " " " Dat.,                  | <i>Nous à nous,</i> to us. | <i>Vous, à vous,</i> to you. | <i>Leur, à eux</i> to them | <i>Leur, à elle</i> to them |
| " direct, or Accusative,     | <i>Nous,</i> us.           | <i>Vous,</i> you.            | <i>Les, eux,</i> them.     | <i>Les, elles,</i> them.    |

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

## Singular.

|                          |                           |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| First Person,            | My, <i>mon, ma, mes.</i>  |
| Second Person,           | Thy, <i>ton, ta, tes.</i> |
| Third Person, Masculine, | His, <i>son, sa, ses.</i> |
| " " Feminine,            | Her, <i>son, sa, ses.</i> |
| " " Neuter,              | Its,                      |

## Plural.

|                            |
|----------------------------|
| Our, <i>notre, nos.</i>    |
| Your, <i>votre, vos.</i>   |
| Their, <i>leur, leurs.</i> |
| Their, <i>leur, leurs.</i> |
| Their.                     |

---

| SINGULAR POSSESSIVE. |              |             | PLURAL POSSESSIVE. |              |
|----------------------|--------------|-------------|--------------------|--------------|
|                      | <i>Masc.</i> | <i>Fem.</i> | <i>Masc.</i>       | <i>Fem.</i>  |
| <i>Mine,</i>         | le mien,     | la mienne,  | les miens,         | les miennes. |
| <i>Thine,</i>        | le tien,     | la tienne,  | les tiens,         | les tiennes. |
| <i>His,</i>          | le sien,     | la sienne,  | les siens,         | les siennes. |
| <i>Hers,</i>         | le sien,     | la sienne,  | les siens,         | les siennes. |
| <i>Ours,</i>         | le nôtre,    | la nôtre,   | les nôtres,        | les nôtres.  |
| <i>Yours,</i>        | le vôtre,    | la vôtre,   | les vôtres,        | les vôtres.  |
| <i>Theirs.</i>       | le leur,     | la leur,    | les leurs,         | les leurs.   |

---

## RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

|                 |                 |               |                   |
|-----------------|-----------------|---------------|-------------------|
| <i>Who,</i>     | qui.            | <i>Which,</i> | qui, que, lequel. |
| <i>That,</i>    | qui.            | <i>What,</i>  | quoi, que, quel.  |
| <i>Whose,</i>   | } de qui, dont. |               |                   |
| <i>Of whom,</i> |                 |               |                   |
| <i>Whom,</i>    | que, qui.       |               |                   |

None of the above pronouns, except *quel* and *lequel*, change their form to express number and gender. These two do it thus:—

| <i>Masculine.</i> |           | <i>Feminine.</i> |             |
|-------------------|-----------|------------------|-------------|
| <i>Quel,</i>      | quels,    | <i>quelle,</i>   | quelles.    |
| <i>Lequel,</i>    | lesquels, | <i>lequelle,</i> | lesquelles. |

The former does not take the article; it merely takes the preposition. But the latter takes the article, and joins it on to itself.

|                 |           |                     |             |
|-----------------|-----------|---------------------|-------------|
| <i>De quel,</i> | de quels, | <i>de quelle,</i>   | de quelles. |
| <i>A quel,</i>  | à quels,  | <i>à quelle,</i>    | à quelles.  |
| <i>Duquel,</i>  | desquels, | <i>de laquelle,</i> | desquelles. |
| <i>Auquel,</i>  | auxquels, | <i>à laquelle</i>   | auxquelles. |

---

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

## SINGULAR.

| <i>Masculine.</i>  |                      | <i>Feminine.</i> |                      |
|--------------------|----------------------|------------------|----------------------|
| <i>Ce, or cet,</i> | <i>this or that.</i> | <i>Cette,</i>    | <i>this or that.</i> |
| <i>Celui,</i>      | <i>he or that.</i>   | <i>Celle,</i>    | <i>she or that.</i>  |
| <i>Celui-ci,</i>   | <i>this.</i>         | <i>Celle-ci,</i> | <i>this.</i>         |
| <i>Celui-la,</i>   | <i>that.</i>         | <i>Celle-la,</i> | <i>that.</i>         |

## PLURAL.

| <i>Masculine.</i> |                        | <i>Feminine.</i> |                        |
|-------------------|------------------------|------------------|------------------------|
| Ces,              | <i>these or those.</i> | Ces,             | <i>these or those.</i> |
| Ceux,             | <i>those.</i>          | Celles,          | <i>those.</i>          |
| Ceux-ci,          | <i>these.</i>          | Celles-ci,       | <i>these.</i>          |
| Ceux-là,          | <i>those.</i>          | Celles-là,       | <i>those.</i>          |

## INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

## SINGULAR.

| <i>Masculine.</i>    |                            | <i>Feminine.</i>            |
|----------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>All,</i>          | <i>tout,</i>               | <i>toute.</i>               |
| <i>Both,</i>         | <i>l'un et l'autre,</i>    | <i>l'une et l'autre.</i>    |
| <i>Either,</i>       | <i>l'un ou l'autre,</i>    | <i>l'une ou l'autre.</i>    |
| <i>Neither,</i>      | <i>ni l'un ni l'autre,</i> | <i>ni l'une ni l'autre.</i> |
| <i>One another,</i>  | <i>l'un l'autre,</i>       | <i>l'une l'autre.</i>       |
| <i>Somebody, or</i>  | } <i>quelqu'un,</i>        | } <i>quelqu'une.</i>        |
| <i>Some one.</i>     |                            |                             |
| <i>Everybody, or</i> |                            |                             |
| <i>Every one,</i>    |                            |                             |
| <i>Nobody,</i>       | <i>chacun,</i>             | <i>chacune.</i>             |
| <i>None,</i>         | <i>aucun,</i>              | <i>aucune.</i>              |
|                      | <i>nul,</i>                | <i>nulle.</i>               |

## PLURAL.

| <i>Masculine.</i>   |                                  | <i>Feminine.</i>                                    |
|---------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|
| <i>All,</i>         | <i>tous,</i>                     | <i>toutes.</i>                                      |
| <i>Both,</i>        | <i>les uns et les autres,</i>    | <i>les unes et les autres.</i>                      |
| <i>Either,</i>      | <i>les uns ou les autres,</i>    | <i>les unes ou les autres.</i>                      |
| <i>Neither,</i>     | <i>ni les uns ni les autres,</i> | <i>ni les unes ni les autres.</i>                   |
| <i>One another,</i> | <i>les uns les autres,</i>       | <i>les unes les autres.</i>                         |
| <i>Somebody, or</i> | } <i>quelques-uns.</i>           | } <i>quelques-unes.</i>                             |
| <i>Some one,</i>    |                                  |                                                     |
| <i>Any body,</i>    | } <i>quiconque,</i>              | } <i>Singular number only, and of both genders.</i> |
| <i>Whoever,</i>     |                                  |                                                     |
| <i>Whatever,</i>    |                                  |                                                     |
| <i>Nobody,</i>      |                                  |                                                     |
| <i>Many,</i>        | <i>plusieurs,</i>                | } <i>Plural number only, and of both genders</i>    |
| <i>Nothing,</i>     | <i>rien,</i>                     |                                                     |
|                     |                                  | } <i>Singular number only, and of both genders.</i> |

|                        |   |                                  |                                   |     |
|------------------------|---|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----|
| <i>I, so, or such,</i> | } | le                               | } These never change their forms. |     |
| <i>Of it, of him,</i>  |   | }                                |                                   | en, |
| <i>Of them,</i>        |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>Of her,</i>         | } |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>To it, to him,</i>  |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>To her,</i>         |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>To them,</i>        | } | on,                              |                                   |     |
| <i>One, they,</i>      |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>People,</i>         |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>We,</i>             | } | }                                |                                   |     |
| <i>Self, or</i>        |   |                                  |                                   |     |
| <i>Selves,</i>         |   |                                  |                                   |     |
|                        |   | se, which sometimes becomes soi. |                                   |     |

## LIST OF PREPOSITIONS.

WHICH ARE IMMEDIATELY FOLLOWED BY THE NOUN OR PRONOUN TO WHICH THEY APPLY.

|                                             |                                     |
|---------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>A, at or to.</i>                         | <i>Excepté, except.</i>             |
| <i>Après, after.</i>                        | <i>Hormis, excepting.</i>           |
| <i>A travers, through.</i>                  | <i>Hors, but or except.</i>         |
| <i>Attendu, considering, on account of.</i> | <i>Malgré, in spite of.</i>         |
| <i>Avant, before.</i>                       | <i>Moyennant, for, by means of.</i> |
| <i>Avec, with.</i>                          | <i>Nonobstant, notwithstanding.</i> |
| <i>Chez, at or to.</i>                      | <i>Outre, besides.</i>              |
| <i>Comme, like.</i>                         | <i>Par, by.</i>                     |
| <i>Concernant, about.</i>                   | <i>Par-deça, on this side.</i>      |
| <i>Contre, against.</i>                     | <i>Par-delà, on that side.</i>      |
| <i>Dans, in.</i>                            | <i>Par-dessous, under or below.</i> |
| <i>De, of or from.</i>                      | <i>Par-dessus, above.</i>           |
| <i>De dessous, from under.</i>              | <i>Parmi, among.</i>                |
| <i>Le dessus, from above.</i>               | <i>Pendant, during.</i>             |
| <i>Depuis, since.</i>                       | <i>Pour, for.</i>                   |
| <i>Derrière, behind.</i>                    | <i>Sans, without.</i>               |
| <i>Dès, from.</i>                           | <i>Sauf, save.</i>                  |
| <i>Devant, before.</i>                      | <i>Selon, according to.</i>         |
| <i>Durant, during.</i>                      | <i>Sous, under.</i>                 |
| <i>En, in.</i>                              | <i>Suivant, according to.</i>       |
| <i>Entre, between.</i>                      | <i>Sur, upon.</i>                   |
| <i>Envers, to or towards.</i>               | <i>Touchant, touching.</i>          |
| <i>Environ, about.</i>                      | <i>Vers, towards, about.</i>        |
|                                             | <i>Vu, seeing.</i>                  |

## LIST OF PREPOSITIONS

WHICH MUST HAVE THE PREPOSITION "DE" IMMEDIATELY AFTER THEM, OR THAT PREPOSITION UNITED WITH THE ARTICLE WHEN IT BECOMES "DU," OR "DES."

|                                              |                                             |
|----------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| A cause, <i>because.</i>                     | A l'abri, <i>secure.</i>                    |
| A couvert, <i>sheltered.</i>                 | A l'entour, <i>round about.</i>             |
| Au-deça, <i>on this side.</i>                | A l'exclusion, <i>excluding.</i>            |
| Au-delà, <i>on the other side.</i>           | A l'opposite, <i>opposite to.</i>           |
| Au-dessous, <i>below.</i>                    | Au lieu, <i>instead.</i>                    |
| Au-dessus, <i>above.</i>                     | A la faveur, <i>by favour.</i>              |
| Au-devant, <i>before.</i>                    | A la mode, <i>after the manner.</i>         |
| Au-dérrière, <i>behind.</i>                  | Au moyen, <i>by means.</i>                  |
| A côté, <i>by, beside.</i>                   | Au milieu, <i>in the middle.</i>            |
| A fleur, <i>near the edge.</i>               | Au niveau, <i>even with.</i>                |
| A retour, <i>against, in return.</i>         | Auprès, <i>by, near.</i>                    |
| Aux dépens, <i>at the expenses.</i>          | Au prix, <i>at the expense.</i>             |
| A force, <i>by strength.</i>                 | Au péril, <i>at the peril.</i>              |
| Aux environs, <i>near, about.</i>            | Au risque, <i>at the risk.</i>              |
| Au grand regret, <i>to the great regret.</i> | A raison, <i>at the rate.</i>               |
| A l'égard, <i>as to.</i>                     | Rez de terre, <i>level with the ground.</i> |
| A l'insu, <i>unknown to.</i>                 | Au-travers, <i>through.</i>                 |
| A l'exception, <i>excepted.</i>              | En dépit, <i>in spite.</i>                  |
| A moins, <i>for less or under</i>            | Pour l'amour, <i>for the sake.</i>          |
| A la réserve. { <i>reserving only.</i>       | Vis à-vis, <i>over, against.</i>            |
| { <i>excepted.</i>                           |                                             |

## LIST OF CONJUNCTIONS.

## 1.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE INFINITIVE.

|                                       |                                    |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| A fin, <i>in order to.</i>            | De peur de, <i>for fear of.</i>    |
| A moins de, <i>unless.</i>            | Faute de, <i>for want of.</i>      |
| Avant de, <i>before.</i>              | Jusqu'à, <i>till.</i>              |
| Au lieu de, <i>instead of.</i>        | Loin de, <i>far from.</i>          |
| Au point de, <i>to such an extent</i> | Plutôt que de, <i>rather than.</i> |
| <i>(pass, &amp;c.) that.</i>          | Pour, <i>for.</i>                  |
| De crainte de, <i>for fear of.</i>    | Sans, <i>without.</i>              |

## II.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

A fin que, *that*.  
 A moins que, *unless*.  
 Avant que, *before*.  
 Au cas que, *in case that*.  
 Bien que, *though*.  
 De crainte que, *for fear*.  
 De peur que, *lest*.  
 En cas que, *if*.  
 Encore que, *though*.  
 Jusqu'à ce que, *till*.  
 Loin que, *far from*.

Malgré que, *for all that*.  
 Nonobstant que, *for all that*.  
 Non pas que, *not that*.  
 Posé que, *suppose that*.  
 Pour que, *that*.  
 Pourvu que, *provided*.  
 Quoique, *though*.  
 Sans que, *without*.  
 Soit que, *whether*.  
 Supposé que, *suppose that*.  
 Dieu veuille que, *God grant*.

## III.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN NEITHER THE INFINITIVE NOR THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

A cause que, *because*.  
 A condition que, *provided*.  
 Ainsi, *thus*.  
 Ainsi que, *as*.  
 Après que, *after*.  
 Au lieu que, *whereas*.  
 Au moins, *at least*.  
 Aussi, *also*.  
 Aussi bien, *the more so as*.  
 Aussi bien que, *as well as*.  
 Aussitôt que, *as soon as*.  
 Au surplus, *moreover*.  
 Autant que, *as much*.  
 Car, *for*.  
 Cependant, *however*.  
 C'est pourquoi, *that is why, therefore*.  
 Comme, *as*.  
 Conséquemment, } *consequently*  
 Par conséquent, }  
 D'abord que, *as soon as*.  
 D'abord—ensuite, *in the first place—then, (besides.)*  
 D'ailleurs, *besides*.  
 D'autant que, *whereas*.

De façon que, *so that*.  
 Depuis que, *since*.  
 De plus, *moreover*.  
 De sorte que, *so that*.  
 Dès que, *as soon as*.  
 Donc, *then*.  
 Durant que, *during*.  
 Et, *and*.  
 En effet, *indeed*.  
 Enfin, *in short*.  
 Ensuite, *afterwards, then*.  
 Joint à cela, *moreover*.  
 Lorsque, *when*.  
 Mais, *but*.  
 Même, *even*.  
 Néanmoins, *nevertheless*.  
 Ni, *nor*.  
 Ni—ni, *neither—nor*.  
 Ni—non plus, *nor—neither*.  
 Non seulement, *(not only,) mais (but ;)* or *non seulement mais encore, (mais même ; mais.)*  
 Or, *now (in reasoning.)*  
 Ou, *or ; ou—ou, either—or*.



---

|                                                                          |                                                                                    |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Ou bien, <i>or assuredly.</i>                                            | Si bien que, <i>so that.</i>                                                       |
| Outre cela, <i>and (but) besides ;</i><br><i>add to that ; moreover.</i> | Si ce n'est que, <i>except that.</i>                                               |
| Parceque, <i>because.</i>                                                | Si non, sinon, <i>if not : else, or else</i>                                       |
| Pendant que, <i>while.</i>                                               | Silôt que, <i>as soon as.</i>                                                      |
| Pour lors, <i>then.</i>                                                  | Suivant que, <i>according as.</i>                                                  |
| Pourquoi, <i>why.</i>                                                    | Surquoi, <i>whereupon.</i>                                                         |
| Pourtant, <i>however.</i>                                                | Surtout, <i>especially.</i>                                                        |
| Puis, <i>then.</i>                                                       | Tandis que, <i>whilst (also whereas ;</i><br><i>whilst all the time, of things</i> |
| Puisque, <i>since.</i>                                                   | <i>that should not co-exist.)</i>                                                  |
| Quand, <i>when.</i>                                                      | Tant que, <i>as long as.</i>                                                       |
| Quand même, <i>even if, although.</i>                                    | Toutefois, <i>however, nevertheless,</i>                                           |
| Selon que, <i>according as.</i>                                          | <i>yet.</i>                                                                        |
| Si, <i>if.</i>                                                           |                                                                                    |

# PARADIGMS OF THE VERBS.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb, AVOIR, *to have*.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

|        |                             |           |                              |
|--------|-----------------------------|-----------|------------------------------|
| Avoir, | PRESENT.<br><i>to have.</i> | Avoir eu, | PAST.<br><i>to have had.</i> |
|--------|-----------------------------|-----------|------------------------------|

## PARTICIPLES.

|        |                            |                              |                                       |                             |
|--------|----------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Ayant, | PRESENT.<br><i>having.</i> | Eu, m. ; eue, f. <i>had.</i> | PAST.<br>Ayant eu, <i>having had.</i> | PAST.<br><i>having had.</i> |
|--------|----------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------|

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

|             |                            |
|-------------|----------------------------|
| J'ai,       | PRESENT.<br><i>I have.</i> |
| Tu as,      | <i>thou hast.</i>          |
| Il a,       | <i>he has.</i>             |
| Nous avons, | <i>we have.</i>            |
| Vous avez,  | <i>you have.</i>           |
| Ils ont,    | <i>they have.</i>          |

|              |                             |
|--------------|-----------------------------|
| J'avais,     | IMPERFECT.<br><i>I had.</i> |
| Tu avais,    | <i>thou hadst.</i>          |
| Il avait,    | <i>he had.</i>              |
| Nous avions, | <i>we had.</i>              |
| Vous aviez,  | <i>you had.</i>             |
| Ils avaient, | <i>they had.</i>            |

|                |                                            |
|----------------|--------------------------------------------|
| J'ai eu,       | PRETERIT INDEFINITE.<br><i>I have had.</i> |
| Tu as eu,      | <i>thou hast had.</i>                      |
| Il a eu,       | <i>he has had.</i>                         |
| Nous avons eu, | <i>we have had.</i>                        |
| Vous avez eu,  | <i>you have had.</i>                       |
| Ils ont eu,    | <i>they have had.</i>                      |

|                 |                                  |
|-----------------|----------------------------------|
| J'avais eu,     | PLUPERFECT.<br><i>I had had.</i> |
| Tu avais eu,    | <i>thou hadst had.</i>           |
| Il avait eu,    | <i>he had had.</i>               |
| Nous avions eu, | <i>we had had.</i>               |
| Vous aviez eu,  | <i>you had had.</i>              |
| Ils avaient eu, | <i>they had had.</i>             |

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

|             |                    |
|-------------|--------------------|
| J'eus,      | <i>I had.</i>      |
| Tu eus,     | <i>thou hadst.</i> |
| Il eut,     | <i>he had.</i>     |
| Nous eûmes, | <i>we had.</i>     |
| Vous eûtes, | <i>you had.</i>    |
| Ils eurent, | <i>they had.</i>   |

## FUTURE.

|              |                         |
|--------------|-------------------------|
| J'aurai,     | <i>I shall have.</i>    |
| Tu auras,    | <i>thou shalt have.</i> |
| Il aura,     | <i>he shall have.</i>   |
| Nous aurons, | <i>we shall have.</i>   |
| Vous aurez,  | <i>you shall have.</i>  |
| Ils auront,  | <i>they shall have.</i> |

## CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

|               |                            |
|---------------|----------------------------|
| J'aurais,     | <i>I should have.</i>      |
| Tu aurais,    | <i>thou shouldst have.</i> |
| Il aurait,    | <i>he should have.</i>     |
| Nous aurions, | <i>we should have.</i>     |
| Vous auriez,  | <i>you should have.</i>    |
| Ils auraient, | <i>they should have.</i>   |

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

|                |                        |
|----------------|------------------------|
| J'eus eu,      | <i>I had had.</i>      |
| Tu eus eu,     | <i>thou hadst had.</i> |
| Il eut eu,     | <i>he had had.</i>     |
| Nous eûmes eu, | <i>we had had.</i>     |
| Vous eûtes eu, | <i>you had had.</i>    |
| Ils eurent eu, | <i>they had had.</i>   |

## PAST FUTURE.

|                 |                             |
|-----------------|-----------------------------|
| J'aurai eu,     | <i>I shall have had.</i>    |
| Tu auras eu,    | <i>thou shalt have had.</i> |
| Il aura eu,     | <i>he shall have had.</i>   |
| Nous aurons eu, | <i>we shall have had.</i>   |
| Vous aurez eu,  | <i>you shall have had.</i>  |
| Ils auront eu,  | <i>they shall have had.</i> |

## CONDITIONAL PAST.

|                  |                                |
|------------------|--------------------------------|
| J'aurais eu,     | <i>I should have had.</i>      |
| Tu aurais eu,    | <i>thou shouldst have had.</i> |
| Il aurait eu,    | <i>he should have had.</i>     |
| Nous aurions eu, | <i>we should have had.</i>     |
| Vous auriez eu,  | <i>you should have had.</i>    |
| Ils auraient eu, | <i>they should have had.</i>   |

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

|                    |                                       |                                  |                                                        |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------|
| Aie,<br>Qu'il ait, | <i>have (thou.)<br/>let him have.</i> | Ayons,<br>Ayez,<br>Qu'ils aient, | <i>let us have.<br/>have (you.)<br/>let them have.</i> |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------|

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

### PRESENT.

|                 |                              |
|-----------------|------------------------------|
| Que j'aie,      | <i>that I may have.</i>      |
| Que tu aies,    | <i>that thou mayst have.</i> |
| Qu'il ait,      | <i>that he may have.</i>     |
| Que nous ayons, | <i>that we may have.</i>     |
| Que vous ayez,  | <i>that you may have.</i>    |
| Qu'ils aient,   | <i>that they may have.</i>   |

### IMPERFECT.

|                    |                                |
|--------------------|--------------------------------|
| Que j'eusse,       | <i>that I might have.</i>      |
| Que tu eusses,     | <i>that thou mightst have.</i> |
| Qu'il eût,         | <i>that he might have.</i>     |
| Que nous eussions, | <i>that we might have.</i>     |
| Que vous eussiez,  | <i>that you might have.</i>    |
| Qu'ils eussent,    | <i>that they might have.</i>   |

### PRETERIT.

|                    |                                  |
|--------------------|----------------------------------|
| Que j'aie eu,      | <i>that I may have had.</i>      |
| Que tu aies eu,    | <i>that thou mayst have had.</i> |
| Qu'il ait eu,      | <i>that he may have had.</i>     |
| Que nous ayons eu, | <i>that we may have had.</i>     |
| Que vous ayez eu,  | <i>that you may have had.</i>    |
| Qu'ils aient eu,   | <i>that they may have had.</i>   |

### PLUPERFECT.

|                       |                                    |
|-----------------------|------------------------------------|
| Que j'eusse eu,       | <i>that I might have had.</i>      |
| Que tu eusses eu,     | <i>that thou mightst have had.</i> |
| Qu'il eût eu,         | <i>that he might have had.</i>     |
| Que nous eussions eu, | <i>that we might have had.</i>     |
| Que vous eussiez eu,  | <i>that you might have had.</i>    |
| Qu'ils eussent eu,    | <i>that they might have had.</i>   |

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, *Etre*. *to be*.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

|                                                  |                                                           |
|--------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>PRESENT.</b><br><i>Etre,</i><br><i>to be.</i> | <b>PAST.</b><br><i>Avoir été,</i><br><i>to have been.</i> |
|--------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|

## PARTICIPLES.

|                                                   |                                             |                                                          |
|---------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>PRESENT.</b><br><i>Etant,</i><br><i>being.</i> | <b>PAST.</b><br><i>Été,</i><br><i>been.</i> | <b>PAST.</b><br><i>Ayant été,</i><br><i>having been.</i> |
|---------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

| <b>PRESENT.</b>                                                                                                    |                                                                                                            | <b>PRETERIT INDEFINITE.</b>                                                                                                         |                                                                                                                                                 |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Je suis,</i><br><i>Tu es,</i><br><i>Il est,</i><br><i>Nous sommes.</i><br><i>Vous êtes,</i><br><i>Ils sont,</i> | <i>I am.</i><br><i>thou art.</i><br><i>he is.</i><br><i>we are.</i><br><i>you are.</i><br><i>they are.</i> | <i>J'ai été,</i><br><i>Tu as été,</i><br><i>Il a été,</i><br><i>Nous avons été,</i><br><i>Vous avez été,</i><br><i>Ils ont été,</i> | <i>I have been.</i><br><i>thou hast been.</i><br><i>he has been.</i><br><i>we have been.</i><br><i>you have been.</i><br><i>they have been.</i> |

| <b>IMPERFECT.</b>                                                                                                           |                                                                                                                  | <b>PLUPERFECT.</b>                                                                                                                                  |                                                                                                                                              |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>J'étais,</i><br><i>Tu étais,</i><br><i>Il était,</i><br><i>Nous étions,</i><br><i>Vous étiez,</i><br><i>Ils étaient,</i> | <i>I was.</i><br><i>thou wast.</i><br><i>he was.</i><br><i>we were.</i><br><i>you were.</i><br><i>they were.</i> | <i>J'avais été,</i><br><i>Tu avais été,</i><br><i>Il avait été,</i><br><i>Nous avions été,</i><br><i>Vous aviez été,</i><br><i>Ils avaient été,</i> | <i>I had been.</i><br><i>thou hadst been.</i><br><i>he had been.</i><br><i>we had been.</i><br><i>you had been.</i><br><i>they had been.</i> |

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

|             |                   |
|-------------|-------------------|
| Je fus,     | <i>I was.</i>     |
| Tu fus,     | <i>thou wast.</i> |
| Il fut,     | <i>he was.</i>    |
| Nous fûmes, | <i>we were.</i>   |
| Vous fûtes, | <i>you were.</i>  |
| Ils furent, | <i>they were.</i> |

## FUTURE.

|              |                       |
|--------------|-----------------------|
| Je serai,    | <i>I shall be.</i>    |
| Tu seras,    | <i>thou shalt be.</i> |
| Il sera,     | <i>he shall be.</i>   |
| Nous serons, | <i>we shall be.</i>   |
| Vous serez,  | <i>you shall be.</i>  |
| Ils seront,  | <i>they shall be.</i> |

## CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

|               |                          |
|---------------|--------------------------|
| Je serais,    | <i>I should be.</i>      |
| Tu serais,    | <i>thou shouldst be.</i> |
| Il serait,    | <i>he should be.</i>     |
| Nous serions, | <i>we should be.</i>     |
| Vous seriez,  | <i>you should be.</i>    |
| Ils seraient, | <i>they should be.</i>   |

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

|                 |                         |
|-----------------|-------------------------|
| J'eus été,      | <i>I had been.</i>      |
| Tu eus été,     | <i>thou hadst been.</i> |
| Il eut été,     | <i>he had been.</i>     |
| Nous eûmes été, | <i>we had been.</i>     |
| Vous eûtes été, | <i>you had been.</i>    |
| Ils eurent été, | <i>they had been.</i>   |

## PAST FUTURE.

|                  |                              |
|------------------|------------------------------|
| J'aurais été,    | <i>I shall have been.</i>    |
| Tu auras été,    | <i>thou shalt have been.</i> |
| Il aura été,     | <i>he shall have been.</i>   |
| Nous aurons été, | <i>we shall have been.</i>   |
| Vous aurez été,  | <i>you shall have been.</i>  |
| Ils auront été,  | <i>they shall have been.</i> |

## CONDITIONAL PAST.

|                   |                                 |
|-------------------|---------------------------------|
| J'aurais été,     | <i>I should have been.</i>      |
| Tu aurais été,    | <i>thou shouldst have been.</i> |
| Il aurait été,    | <i>he should have been.</i>     |
| Nous aurions été, | <i>we should have been.</i>     |
| Vous auriez été,  | <i>you should have been.</i>    |
| Ils auraient été, | <i>they should have been.</i>   |

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sois,  
Qu'il soit,

*be (thou.)  
let him be.*

Soyons,  
Soyez,  
Qu'ils soient,

*let us be.  
be (you).  
let them be.*

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## PRESENT.

|                  |                            |
|------------------|----------------------------|
| Que je sois,     | <i>that I may be.</i>      |
| Que tu sois,     | <i>that thou mayst be.</i> |
| Qu'il soit,      | <i>that he may be.</i>     |
| Que nous soyons, | <i>that we may be.</i>     |
| Que vous soyez,  | <i>that you may be.</i>    |
| Qu'il soient,    | <i>that they may be.</i>   |

## IMPERFECT.

|                    |                              |
|--------------------|------------------------------|
| Que je fusse,      | <i>that I might be.</i>      |
| Que tu fusses,     | <i>that thou mightst be.</i> |
| Qu'il fût,         | <i>that he might be.</i>     |
| Que nous fussions, | <i>that we might be.</i>     |
| Que vous fussiez,  | <i>that you might be.</i>    |
| Qu'ils fussent,    | <i>that they might be.</i>   |

## PRETERIT.

|                     |                                   |
|---------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Que j'ai été,       | <i>that I may have been.</i>      |
| Que tu aies été,    | <i>that thou mayst have been.</i> |
| Qu'il ait été,      | <i>that he may have been.</i>     |
| Que nous ayons été, | <i>that we may have been.</i>     |
| Que vous ayez été,  | <i>that you may have been.</i>    |
| Qu'il aient été,    | <i>that they may have been.</i>   |

## PLUPERFECT.

|                        |                                     |
|------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Que j'eusse été,       | <i>that I might have been.</i>      |
| Que tu eusses été,     | <i>that thou mightst have been.</i> |
| Qu'il eût été,         | <i>that he might have been.</i>     |
| Que nous eussions été, | <i>that we might have been.</i>     |
| Que vous eussiez été,  | <i>that you might have been.</i>    |
| Qu'ils eussent été,    | <i>that they might have been.</i>   |

## THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS,

arranged according to the derivation of the Tenses from the four Primary forms.

## I.—INFINITIVE.

|                    |                         |
|--------------------|-------------------------|
| 1st conjugation,   | Donner, (to give.)      |
| 2d       "       " | Finir, (to end.)        |
| 3d       "       " | Recevoir, (to receive.) |
| 4th      "       " | Vendre, (to sell.)      |

## 1. FUTURE, (rai.)

|                 |           |            |           |
|-----------------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| Je donnerai,    | finirai,  | recevrai,  | vendrai.  |
| Tu donneras,    | finiras,  | recevras,  | vendras.  |
| Il donnera,     | finira,   | recevra,   | vendra.   |
| Nous donnerons, | finirons, | recevrons, | vendrons. |
| Vous donnerez,  | finirez,  | recevrez,  | vendrez.  |
| Ils donneront,  | finiront, | recevront, | vendront. |

## 2. CONDITIONAL PRESENT. (rais.)

|                  |             |              |             |
|------------------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| Je donnerais,    | finirais,   | recevrais,   | vendrais,   |
| Tu donnerais,    | finirais,   | recevrais,   | vendrais,   |
| Il donnerait,    | finirait,   | recevrait,   | vendrait,   |
| Nous donnerions, | finirions,  | recevrions,  | vendrions,  |
| Vous donneriez,  | finiriez,   | recevriez,   | vendriez,   |
| Ils donneraient, | finiraient, | recevraient, | vendraient, |

## II.—PAST PARTICIPLE.

|        |        |
|--------|--------|
| Donné. | Reçu.  |
| Finì.  | Vendu. |

## 1. COMPOUND PERFECT.

|             |       |       |        |
|-------------|-------|-------|--------|
| J'ai donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|-------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 2. PLUPERFECT.

|                |       |       |        |
|----------------|-------|-------|--------|
| J'avais donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|----------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 3. PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

|              |       |       |        |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|
| J'eus donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 4. PAST FUTURE.

|                 |       |       |        |
|-----------------|-------|-------|--------|
| J'aurais donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|-----------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 6. CONDITIONAL PAST.

|                 |       |       |        |
|-----------------|-------|-------|--------|
| J'aurais donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|-----------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 6. SUBJUNCTIVE PRETERIT.

|                  |       |       |        |
|------------------|-------|-------|--------|
| Que j'aie donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|------------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 7. SUBJUNCTIVE PLUPERFECT.

|                    |       |       |        |
|--------------------|-------|-------|--------|
| Que j'eusse donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|--------------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 8. INFINITIVE PAST.

|              |       |       |        |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|
| Avoir donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|

## 9. PARTICIPLE PAST.

|              |       |       |        |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|
| Ayant donné, | fini, | reçu, | vendu. |
|--------------|-------|-------|--------|



III.—PRESENT PARTICIPLE, (*ant.*)

Donnant.

Finissant.

Recevant.

Vendant.

*Derived Tenses.*

## 1. INDICATIVE PRESENT.

|               |            |            |          |
|---------------|------------|------------|----------|
| Je donne,     | finis,     | reçois,    | vends.   |
| Tu donnes,    | finis,     | reçois,    | vends.   |
| Il donne,     | finit,     | reçoit,    | vend.    |
| Nous donnons, | finissons, | recevons,  | vendons. |
| Vous donnez,  | finissez,  | recevez,   | vendez.  |
| Ils donnent,  | finissent, | reçoivent, | vendent. |

2. IMPERFECT, (*ais.*)

|                |              |             |            |
|----------------|--------------|-------------|------------|
| Je donnais,    | finissais,   | recevais,   | vendais.   |
| Tu donnais,    | finissais,   | recevais,   | vendais.   |
| Il donnait,    | finissait,   | recevait,   | vendait.   |
| Nous donnions, | finissions,  | recevions,  | vendions.  |
| Vous donniez,  | finissiez,   | receviez,   | vendiez.   |
| Ils donnaient, | finissaient, | recevaient, | vendaient. |

## 3. SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

|                    |             |            |           |
|--------------------|-------------|------------|-----------|
| Que je donne,      | finisse,    | reçoive,   | vende.    |
| Que tu donnes,     | finisses,   | reçoives,  | vendes.   |
| Qu'il donne,       | finisse,    | reçoive,   | vende.    |
| Que nous donnions, | finissions, | recevions, | vendions. |
| Que vous donniez,  | finissiez,  | receviez,  | vendiez.  |
| Qu'ils donnent,    | finissent,  | reçoivent, | vendent.  |

## 4 IMPERATIVE.

|                 |                   |                   |                |
|-----------------|-------------------|-------------------|----------------|
| Donne,          | finis,            | reçois,           | vends.         |
| Qu'il donne,    | qu'il finisse,    | qu'il reçoive,    | qu'il vende.   |
| Donnons,        | finissons,        | recevons,         | vendons.       |
| Donnez,         | finissez,         | recevez,          | vendez.        |
| Qu'ils donnent, | qu'ils finissent, | qu'ils reçoivent, | qu'ils vendent |

## IV.—PERFECT.

|                |           |           |            |
|----------------|-----------|-----------|------------|
| Je donnai,     | finis,    | reçus,    | vendis.    |
| Tu donnas,     | finis,    | reçus,    | vendis.    |
| Il donna,      | finit,    | reçut,    | vendit.    |
| Nous donnâmes, | finîmes,  | reçûmes,  | vendîmes.  |
| Vous donnâtes, | finîtes,  | reçûtes,  | vendîtes.  |
| Ils donnèrent, | finirent, | reçurent, | vendirent. |

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE (*se.*)

|                       |             |             |              |
|-----------------------|-------------|-------------|--------------|
| Que je donnasse,      | finisse,    | reçusse,    | vendisse.    |
| Que tu donnasses,     | finisses,   | reçusses,   | vendisses.   |
| Qu'il donnât,         | finît,      | reçût,      | vendît.      |
| Que nous donnassions, | finissions, | reçussions, | vendissions. |
| Que vous donnassiez,  | finissiez,  | reçussiez,  | vendissiez.  |
| Qu'ils donnassent,    | finissent,  | reçussent,  | vendissent.  |

## TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

## VERBS IN ER.

| <i>Infinitive.</i> | <i>Participles.</i>  | <i>Indicative Present.</i>                        | <i>Subjunctive Present.</i>                         | <i>Perfect.</i> | <i>Future.</i> |
|--------------------|----------------------|---------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|-----------------|----------------|
| 1. <i>Aller,</i>   | allant,<br>allé,     | vais, vas,* va,<br>allons, allez, vont,           | aille, ailles, aille,<br>allions, alliez, aillent,  | allai,          | irai,          |
| 2. <i>Envoyer,</i> | envoyant,<br>envoyé. | envoie, es, e,<br>envoyons, envoyez,<br>envoient. | envoie, es, e,<br>envoyions, envoyiez,<br>envoient. | envoyai,        | enverrai.      |

## VERBS IN IR.

|                      |                          |                                          |                                             |            |              |
|----------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|------------|--------------|
| 3. <i>Fuir.</i>      | fuyant,<br>fui,          | fuis, fuis, fuit,<br>fuyons, ez, fuient, | fuie, fuies, fuie,<br>fuyions, iez, fuient, | fuis,      | fuirai.      |
| 4. <i>Cueillir.</i>  | cueillant,<br>cueilli,   | cueille, es, e,<br>cueillons, ez, ent,   | cueille, es, e,<br>cueillons, iez, ent,     | cueillis,  | cueillirai.  |
| 5. <i>Assaillir.</i> | assaillant,<br>assailli, | assaile, † &c.                           | assaillie, &c.                              | assaillis, | assaillirai. |
| 6. <i>Bouillir.</i>  | bouillant,<br>bouilli.   | bous, bous, bout,<br>bouillons, ez, ent. | bouille, &c.                                | bouillis,  | bouillirai.  |

\* *Imperative*, va, vas-y ; so cueille, assaile, ouvre, offre, souffre ; but cueilles-en, assailles-y, &c.

† *Tressaillir* forms il tressaille and il tressaillit.

| <i>Infinitive.</i>   | <i>Participles.</i> | <i>Indicative Present.</i> | <i>Subjunctive Present.</i> | <i>Perfect.</i> | <i>Future.</i> |
|----------------------|---------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------|----------------|
| 7. <i>Ouvrir,</i>    | ouvrant,            | ouvre,                     | ouvre,                      | ouvris,         | ouvrirai.      |
| 8. <i>Couvrir,</i>   | ouvert,             | couvre,                    | couvre,                     | couvris,        | couvrirai.     |
| 9. <i>Offrir,</i>    | couvrant,           | offre,                     | offre,                      | offris,         | offrirai.      |
| 10. <i>Souffrir,</i> | convert,            | souffre,                   | souffre,                    | souffris,       | souffrirai.    |
| 11. <i>Vêtir,</i>    | offrant,            | vêts, vêts, vêt,           | vête,                       | vêtis,          | vétirai.       |
| 12. <i>Courir,</i>   | offert,             | vêtons, vêtez, vêtent.     | coure,                      | courus,         | courrai.       |
| 13. <i>Mourir,</i>   | souffrant,          | cours, cours, court,       | meure,                      | mourus,         | mourrai.       |
| 14. <i>Acquérir,</i> | souffert,           | courons, ez, ent,          | acquière, es, e,            | acquis,         | acquerrai.     |
| 15. { <i>Venir,</i>  | mourant,            | meurs, meurs, meurt,       | acquérions, iez,            | vins,           | viendrai.      |
| { <i>Tenir,</i>      | mort,               | mourons, ez, meurent,      | acquièrent,                 | tins,           | tiendrai.      |
|                      | acquérant,          | acquiens, rs, rt,          | viennne, es, e,             |                 |                |
|                      | acquis,             | acquérons, acquérez,       | venions, iez, viennent,     |                 |                |
|                      |                     | acquièrent.                | tienne, es, e,              |                 |                |
|                      |                     | viens, viens, vient.       | tenions, iez, tiennent,     |                 |                |
|                      |                     | venons, ez, viennent.      |                             |                 |                |
|                      |                     | tiens, tiens, tient,       |                             |                 |                |
|                      |                     | tenons, ez, tiennent.      |                             |                 |                |

|                     |                           |                                   |                            |                         |                          |
|---------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| 16. <i>Gênr,</i>    | gisant,<br>(imp. gisais,) | il git,<br>gisons, gisez, gisent, |                            |                         |                          |
| 17. <i>Saillir,</i> | saillissant,<br>sailli,   | il saillit,<br>ils saillaient,    | saillisse,<br>saillissent, | saillit,<br>saillirent, | saillira.<br>sailliront. |

## VERBS IN OIR.

|                     |                     |                                                                             |                                                                           |                    |            |
|---------------------|---------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|------------|
| 18. <i>Valoir,</i>  | valant,<br>valu,    | vaux, vaux, vaut,<br>valons, valez, valent,                                 | vaille, es, e,<br>valions, iez, vaillent,                                 | valus,             | vaudrai.   |
| 19. <i>Vouloir,</i> | voulant,<br>voulu,  | veux, veux, veut,<br>voulons, ez, veulent,                                  | veuille, es, e,<br>voulions, vouliez,<br>veuillent,                       | voulus,            | voudrai.   |
| 20. <i>Voir,</i>    | voyant,<br>vu,      | vois, vois, voit,<br>voyons, ez, voient,                                    | voie, voies, voie,<br>voyions, iez, voient,                               | vis,<br>(no impf.) | verrai.    |
| 21. <i>Devoir,</i>  | devant,<br>dû, due, | dois, dois, doit,<br>devons, ez, doivent,                                   | doive, doives, doive,<br>devions, iez, doivent,                           | dus,               | devrai.    |
| 22. <i>Mouvoir,</i> | mouvant,<br>mu,     | meus, meus, met,<br>mouvons. mouvez,<br>meuvent,                            | meuve, es, e,<br>mouvions, mouviez,<br>mouvent,                           | mus,               | mouvrai.   |
| 23. <i>Pouvoir,</i> | pouvant,<br>pu,     | peux (or puis), peux,<br>peut,                                              | puisse, es, e,                                                            | pus,               | pourrai.   |
| 24. <i>Déchoir,</i> | déchu,              | pouvons, ez, peuvent,<br>déchois, ois, oit,<br>déchoyons, ez,<br>déchoient, | puissions, iez, ent,<br>déchoie, es, e,<br>déchoyions, iez,<br>déchoient, | déchus,            | décherrai. |

| <i>Infinitive.</i>                  | <i>Participles.</i>                               | <i>Indicative Present.</i>                                                                                                                               | <i>Subjunctive Present.</i>                                                                                 | <i>Perfect.</i>      | <i>Future.</i>                       |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 25. <i>Echoir,</i>                  | échéant,<br>échu,                                 | échois, échois, échoit,<br>( <i>no imperfect,</i> )                                                                                                      | échoie, &c.,                                                                                                | échus,               | écherrai.                            |
| 26. <i>Pluvoir,</i>                 | pleuvant,<br>plu,                                 | il pleut,                                                                                                                                                | il pleuve,                                                                                                  | il plut,             | il pleuvra.                          |
| 27. <i>Seoir,</i>                   | seyant, séant,<br>sis,                            | il sied,<br>ils siéent,<br>( <i>imperf. il seyait,</i> )                                                                                                 | ( <i>cond. il siérait.</i> )                                                                                |                      | il siéra.                            |
| 28. <i>Surseoir,</i>                | sursoyant,<br>surais, ( <i>imp.</i><br>sursoyais, | sursois, ois, oît,<br>sursoyons, sursoyez,<br>sursoient.                                                                                                 |                                                                                                             | sursis,              | surseoirai.                          |
| 29. <i>Assoir,</i>                  | asseyant,<br>assis,<br><br>assoissant,<br>assis,  | assieds, sieds, sied,<br>asseyons, ez, asseient.<br>( <i>imp. seyait,</i> )<br>assois, ois, oît,<br>assoignons, ez, assoient,<br>( <i>imp. soyais,</i> ) | asseye, es, e,<br>assevions, asseyiez,<br>asseient.<br>assoie, es, e,<br>assoignons, assoyiez,<br>assoient, | assis,<br><br>assis, | asseierai.<br>assiérai.<br>assoirai. |
| 30. <i>Falloir, or<br/>Faillir,</i> | faillant,<br>fallu,<br>failli,                    | faux, faux, faut,<br>faillons, ez, ent,<br>( <i>imp. fallais, faillais,</i> )                                                                            | faille,                                                                                                     | fallus,<br>faillis,  | faudrai.                             |

# VERBS IN RE.

|                       |                       |                                           |                                       |          |            |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|----------|------------|
| 31. <i>Dire</i> ,     | disant,<br>dit,       | dis, dis, dit,<br>disons, dites, disent.  | dise,                                 | dis,     | dirai.     |
| 32. <i>Lire</i> ,     | lisant,<br>lu,        | lis, lis, lit,<br>lisons, lisez, lisent.  | lise,                                 | lus,     | lirai.     |
| 33. <i>Rire</i> ,     | riant,<br>ri,         | ris, &c.<br>rions, &c.                    | rie,                                  | ris,     | rirai.     |
| 34. <i>Ecrire</i> ,   | écrivant,<br>écri,    | écris, &c.<br>écrivons, &c.               | écrive,                               | écrivis, | écrirai.   |
| 35. <i>Conclure</i> , | concluant,<br>conclu, | conclus, &c.<br>concluons, &c.            | conclue,<br>concluions, iez, ent.     | conclus, | conclurai. |
| 36. <i>Faire</i> ,    | faisant,<br>fait,     | fais, &c.<br>faisons, faites. font.       | fasse.                                | fis,     | ferai.     |
| 37. <i>Plaire</i> ,   | plaisant,<br>plu,     | plais, plais, plait,<br>plaçons, ez, ent. | plaise,                               | plus,    | plairai.   |
| 38. <i>Taire</i> ,    | taisant,<br>tù, tue,  | tais, &c.<br>taisons, &c.                 | taise,                                | tus,     | tairai.    |
| 39. <i>Boire</i> ,    | buvant,<br>bu,        | bois, &c.<br>bouvons, ez, boivent,        | boive,                                | bus,     | boirai.    |
| 40. <i>Croire</i> ,   | croyant,<br>cru,      | crois, &c.<br>croyons, ez, croient,       | croie, &c.<br>croyions, iez, croient. | crus,    | croirai.   |
| 41. <i>Cuire</i> ,    | cuisant,<br>cuit,     | cuis, &c.<br>cuisons, &c.                 | cuise,                                | cuisis.  | cuirai.    |

| <i>Infinitive.</i>    | <i>Participles</i>                  | <i>Indicative Present.</i>                   | <i>Subjunctive Present.</i> | <i>Perfect.</i> | <i>Future.</i> |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------|----------------|
| 42. <i>Nuire,</i>     | nuisant,<br>nui,                    | nuis, &c.<br>nuisons, &c.                    | nuise,                      | nuisis.         | nuirai.        |
| 43. <i>Conduire,</i>  | conduisant,<br>conduit,             | conduis, &c.<br>conduisons, &c.              | conduise,                   | conduisis.      | conduirai.     |
| 44. <i>Construire</i> | construisant,<br>construit,         | construis, &c.<br>construisons, &c.          | construise,                 | construisis,    | construirai.   |
| 45. <i>Coudre,</i>    | cousant,<br>cousu,                  | couds, couds, coud,<br>cousons, &c.          | couse,                      | cousis,         | coudrai.       |
| 46. <i>Moudre,</i>    | moulant,<br>moulu,                  | mouds, mouds, moud,<br>moulons, &c.          | moule,                      | moulus,         | moudrai.       |
| 47. <i>Résoudre,</i>  | résolvant,<br>résolu, or<br>résous, | résous, résous, résout,<br>résolvons, &c.    | résolus,                    | résolus,        | résoudrai.     |
| 48. <i>Prendre,</i>   | prenant,<br>pris.                   | prends, ds, prend,<br>prenons, ez, prennent, | prenne,                     | pris,           | prendrai.      |
| 49. <i>Ceindre,</i>   | ceignant,<br>ceint,                 | ceins, ceins, ceint,<br>ceignons, &c.        | ceigne,                     | ceignis,        | ceindrai.      |
| 50. <i>Plaindre,</i>  | plaignant,<br>plaint,               | plaints, plains, plaint,<br>plaignons, &c.   | plaigne,                    | plaignis,       | plaindrai.     |
| 51. <i>Joindre,</i>   | joignant,<br>joint,                 | joins, joins, joint,<br>joignons,            | joigne,                     | joignis,        | joindrai.      |

|                       |                          |                                               |                                            |         |               |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|---------|---------------|
| 52. <i>Naître,</i>    | naissant,<br>né,         | nais, nais, nait,<br>naissons, &c.            | naisse,                                    | naquis, | naîtrai.      |
| 53. <i>Connaître,</i> | connaissant,<br>connu,   | connais, ais, ait,<br>connaissons, &c.        | connaisse,                                 | connus. | connaîtrai.   |
| 54. <i>Paraître,</i>  | paraissant,<br>paru,     | parais, ais, ait,<br>paraissions, &c.         | paraïsse,                                  | parus,  | paraîtrai.    |
| 55. <i>Croître,</i>   | croissant,<br>crû, crûe, | crois, crois, croît,<br>croissons, &c.        | croisse,                                   | crûs,   | croîtrai.     |
| 56. <i>Mettre,</i>    | mettant,<br>mis,         | mets, mets, met,<br>mettons, &c.              | mette,                                     | mis,    | mettrai.      |
| 57. <i>Suivre,</i>    | suivant,<br>suivi,       | suis, suis, suit,<br>suivons, ez, ent.        | suive,                                     | suivis, | suirai.       |
| 58. <i>Vivre,</i>     | vivant,<br>vécu,         | vis, vis, vit,<br>vivons, vivez, vivent,      | vive,                                      | vécus,  | vivrai.       |
| 59. <i>Braire,</i>    |                          | il brait,<br>ils braient.                     | ( <i>cond. il brairait,</i> )              |         | brairai.      |
| 60. <i>Bruire,</i>    | bruyant,                 | il bruit,<br>( <i>imp. bruysait, aient,</i> ) | ( <i>cond. clorais,</i> )                  |         | clorai.       |
| 61. <i>Clore,</i>     | clos,                    | clos, clos, clôt,                             | qu'il éclore,<br>qu'ils éclosent,          |         | il éclora.    |
| 62. <i>Eclorre,</i>   | éclos,                   | il éclôt,<br>ils éclosent,                    | ( <i>cond. éclorait,<br/>écloraient.</i> ) |         | ils écloront. |
| 63. <i>Frïre,</i>     | frit,                    | fris, fris, frit,                             | ( <i>cond. frirais,</i> )                  |         | frirai.       |



| <i>Infinitive.</i>  | <i>Participles.</i>   | <i>Infinitive Present.</i>                     | <i>Subjunctive Present.</i>                      | <i>Perfect.</i> | <i>Future.</i> |
|---------------------|-----------------------|------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|-----------------|----------------|
| 64. <i>Luire,</i>   | luisant,<br>lui,      | luis, luis, luit,<br>luisons, &c.              | luise,                                           |                 | luirai.        |
| 65. <i>Pâître,</i>  | paissant,<br>pû, pûe, | pais, pais, pait,<br>paissons, &c.             | païsse,                                          |                 | paîtrai.       |
| 66. <i>Poindre,</i> |                       |                                                |                                                  |                 | poindrai.      |
| 67. <i>Suffire,</i> | suffisant,<br>suffi,  | suffis, suffis, suffit,<br>suffisons, ez, ent. | suffise,                                         |                 | suffirai.      |
| 68. <i>Confire,</i> | confisant,<br>confit, | confis, confis, confit,<br>confisons, ez, ent. | confise,                                         |                 | confirai.      |
| 69. <i>Traire,</i>  | trayant,<br>trait,    | trais, trais, trait,<br>trayons, ez, traient,  | traie, traies, traie,<br>trayions, iez, traient. |                 | trairai.       |
| 70. <i>Vaincre,</i> | vainquant,<br>vaincu, | vaincs, vaincs, vainct,<br>vainquons, ez, ent. | vainque,                                         | vainquis,       | vaincrai.      |

## PRESENT TENSE OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

1. Verbs of the Second Conjugation end in *ir*. The root, however, must be considered to end in *i*; the termination of the infinitive to be *r*.

*finir*, (finire,) to end, finish; root, *fini*-.

2. The singular of the present tense of the indicative adds *s, st, t*, to the root.

The plural first extends the root by adding *ss*, and then adds the same terminations as the First Conjugation: *ons, ez, ent*.

|    |                            |                 |
|----|----------------------------|-----------------|
| 3. | Je fini- <i>s</i> ,        | I finish.       |
|    | Tu fini- <i>s</i> ,        | thou finishest. |
|    | Il fini- <i>t</i> ,        | he finishes.    |
|    | Nous fini- <i>ss-ons</i> , | we finish.      |
|    | Vous fini- <i>ss-ez</i> ,  | you finish.     |
|    | Ils fini- <i>ss-ent</i> .  | they finish.    |

4. VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION THAT DO NOT TAKE *ss*.

There are, however, a few verbs of the Second Conjugation, which, instead of inserting *ss* before the terminations that begin with a vowel, throw away the characteristic before these terminations, and also from the singular of the present tense.

5. The characteristic thus rejected is *i*; but, besides this, the *m, t, or v*, then left as the first consonant of the root, (being mute,) is also thrown away in the singular.

6. Thus from *dormi-r, senti-r*, (the roots of which, after *i* is rejected, are *dorm, sent* :)

|                                       |                                       |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Je dor- <i>s</i> not dorm- <i>s</i> . | Je sen- <i>s</i> not sent- <i>s</i> . |
| Tu dor- <i>s</i> , " dorm- <i>s</i> . | Tu sen- <i>s</i> " sent- <i>s</i> .   |
| Il dor- <i>t</i> , " dorm- <i>t</i> . | Il sen- <i>t</i> " sent- <i>t</i> .   |

## 7. Examples:—

|          |             |                                                                     |
|----------|-------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Dormi-r, | to sleep.   | { Je dor- <i>s</i> , but nous dorm- <i>ons</i> , &c.,<br>(dormirs.) |
| Menti-r, | to lie.     | { Je men- <i>s</i> , but nous ment- <i>ons</i> , &c.,<br>(mentiri.) |
| Parti-r  | to set out. | Je par- <i>s</i> but nous part- <i>ons</i> , &c.,                   |
| Senti-r, | to feel.    | { Je sen- <i>s</i> , but nous sent- <i>ons</i> , &c.,<br>(sentire.) |

|                |                 |                                     |
|----------------|-----------------|-------------------------------------|
| Sorti-r,       | to go out.      | Je sor-s, but nous sort-ons, &c.,   |
| Servi-r,       | { to serve.     | { Je ser-s, but nous serv-ons, &c., |
|                | { to serve for. | { (servire.)                        |
| Se repent-i-r, | to repent.      | { Je me repen-s, but nous nous re-  |
|                |                 | { pent-ons.                         |

### 8. THIRD CONJUGATION.—PRESENT TENSE OF THE INDICATIVE.

| 1. Recevoir to receive. |               | 2. Devoir, to owe. |            |
|-------------------------|---------------|--------------------|------------|
| reçois-s,               | recev-ons.    | doi-s.             | dev-ons.   |
| reçois-s,               | recev-ez.     | doi-s.             | dev-ez.    |
| reçois-t,               | reçois-r-ent. | doi-t.             | doi-v-ent. |

The Third Conjugation, which is hardly worth the name, contains only *devoir* and the following verbs, (chiefly from the Latin compounds of *capere*.) The infinitive was originally written, not in *oir*, but in *eir* or *er*.

Apercevoir, to perceive, (ad percipere.)

Concevoir, to conceive, comprehend, (concipere.)

Percevoir, to gather or collect taxes, &c., (percipere.)

Décevoir, to deceive, (decipere.)

### 9. FOURTH CONJUGATION.—PRESENT TENSE.

| Rompre.    |                | Battre. | Vendre. |
|------------|----------------|---------|---------|
| Je romp-s, | nous romp-ons, | bat-s,  | vend-s. |
| Tu romp-s, | vous romp-ez,  | bat-s,  | vend-s, |
| Il romp-t, | ils romp-ent,  | bat.    | vend.   |

10. A verb, whose infinitive ends in *re*, is said to be of the Fourth Conjugation.

The characteristic of the Fourth Conjugation is *p*, *d*, or *tt*.

11. The first and second persons singular end in *s*, the third in *t*; but the *t* falls away except after *p*. *Je vend-s, tu vend-s, il vend*, (not *il vent-t*; but,) *il romp-t*. If the root ends in *tt*, one of these *t*'s also falls away throughout the singular: *bat-s, bat-s, bat*; *bat-tons*, &c.

### ON DOUBLING THE CHARACTERISTIC IN *Appeler*, &c.

12. In the first Conjugation, if the last syllable of the root has for its vowel an *e* followed by a single consonant, when this *e* is followed by *e* mute, (as in *e, es, e, ent*, and also in *e-rai, e-raus*,) it sometimes takes the grave accent (`), some times doubles the consonant.

(a) If the root ends in *n, s, v, g, d, &c.*, the *e* always takes the grave accent.

(b) If the verb already has the acute (*céder*), this acute must be changed into the grave before the terminations above given. *Je cède &c.*, but plural, *nous cédon*s

13. Mener to lead.

Je mèn-*e*,  
Tu mèn-*es*,  
Il mèn-*e*,  
Nous men-*ons*,  
Vous men-*ez*,  
Ils mèn-*ent*.

Appeler, to call.

J'appell-*e*,  
Tu appell-*es*,  
Il appell-*e*,  
Nous appell-*ons*,  
Vous appell-*ez*,  
Ils appell-*ent*.

14. The consonants, that you may doubled see  
Before *é* mute, are only *l* and *t*.

(a) Most verbs in *éter, eler*, (when the *e* has not the acute accent *éter, éler*) double the consonant; as *appeler, atteler, chan-celer, ép-ler, cacheter, jeter, &c.*

(b) Those in *éter, éler*, (e. g. *révéler, végétér*), are conjugated like *céder*.

15. The few verbs in *eter, eler*, e. g. *acheter*, to buy, (with its compounds *racheter, suracheter, celer, déceler, geler, peler, &c.*, (together with all in *éter, éter*), will take the grave accent: *je cèle, &c.*

If the root ends in *é*, (as *cré-er*, root *cré*), the *é* will remain throughout.

## CARDINAL AND ORDINAL NUMBERS.—

### *Nombres Cardinaux et Ordinaux.*

#### CARDINAL NUMBERS.

|                                     |     |
|-------------------------------------|-----|
| Un, <i>masc.</i> , <i>une, fem.</i> | 1.  |
| Deux.                               | 2.  |
| Trois, . . . . .                    | 3.  |
| Quatre, . . . . .                   | 4.  |
| Cinq, . . . . .                     | 5.  |
| Six, . . . . .                      | 6.  |
| Sept, . . . . .                     | 7.  |
| Huit, . . . . .                     | 8.  |
| Neuf, . . . . .                     | 9.  |
| Dix, . . . . .                      | 10. |

#### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

|                                             |       |
|---------------------------------------------|-------|
| Premier, <i>masc.</i> , <i>première, f.</i> | 1st.  |
| Deuxième; second, <i>m.-e f.</i>            | 2nd.  |
| Troisième, . . . . .                        | 3d.   |
| Quatrième, . . . . .                        | 4th.  |
| Cinquième, . . . . .                        | 5th.  |
| Sixième, . . . . .                          | 6th.  |
| Septième, . . . . .                         | 7th.  |
| Huitième, . . . . .                         | 8th.  |
| Neuvième, . . . . .                         | 9th.  |
| Dixième, . . . . .                          | 10th. |

| CARDINAL NUMBERS.                             | ORDINAL NUMBERS.                                   |
|-----------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| Onze, . . . . . 11.                           | Onzième, . . . . . 11th.                           |
| Douze, . . . . . 12.                          | Douzième, . . . . . 12th.                          |
| Treize, . . . . . 13.                         | Treizième, . . . . . 13th.                         |
| Quatorze, . . . . . 14.                       | Quatorzième, . . . . . 14th.                       |
| Quinze, . . . . . 15.                         | Quinzième, . . . . . 15th.                         |
| Seize, . . . . . 16.                          | Seizième, . . . . . 16th.                          |
| Dix-sept, . . . . . 17.                       | Dix-septième, . . . . . 17th.                      |
| Dix-huit, . . . . . 18.                       | Dix-huitième, . . . . . 18th.                      |
| Dix-neuf, . . . . . 19.                       | Dix-neuvième, . . . . . 19th.                      |
| Vingt, . . . . . 20.                          | Vingtième, . . . . . 20th.                         |
| Vingt et un, . . . . . 21.                    | Vingt et unième, . . . . . 21st.                   |
| Vingt-deux, . . . . . 22.                     | Vingt-deuxième, . . . . . 22d.                     |
| Vingt-trois, &c., . . . . . 23.               | Vingt-troisième, . . . . . 23d.                    |
| Trente, . . . . . 30.                         | Trentième, . . . . . 30th.                         |
| Trente et un, . . . . . 31.                   | Trente et unième, . . . . . 31st.                  |
| Trente-deux, &c., . . . . . 32.               | Trente-deuxième, . . . . . 32d.                    |
| Quarante, . . . . . 40.                       | Quarantième, . . . . . 40th.                       |
| Quarante et un, . . . . . 41.                 | Quarante et unième, . . . . . 41st.                |
| Quarante-deux, &c., . . . . . 42.             | Quarante-deuxième, . . . . . 42d.                  |
| Cinquante, . . . . . 50.                      | Cinquantième, . . . . . 50th.                      |
| Cinquante et un, . . . . . 51.                | Cinquante et unième, . . . . . 51st.               |
| Cinquante-deux, &c., . . . . . 52.            | Cinquante-deuxième, . . . . . 52d.                 |
| Soixante, . . . . . 60.                       | Soixantième, . . . . . 60th.                       |
| Soixante et un, . . . . . 61.                 | Soixante et unième, . . . . . 61st.                |
| Soixante-deux, . . . . . 62.                  | Soixante-deuxième, . . . . . 62d.                  |
| Soixante-dix, . . . . . 70.                   | Soixante-dixième, . . . . . 70th.                  |
| Soixante et onze, . . . . . 71.               | Soixante et onzième, . . . . . 71st.               |
| Soixante-douze, . . . . . 72.                 | Soixante-douzième, . . . . . 72d.                  |
| Soixante-treize, &c., . . . . . 73.           | Soixante-treizième, . . . . . 73d.                 |
| Quatre-vingt, . . . . . 80.                   | Quatre-vingtième, . . . . . 80th.                  |
| Quatre-vingt-un, . . . . . 81.                | Quatre-vingt-unième, . . . . . 81st.               |
| Quatre-vingt-deux, &c., . . . . . 82.         | Quatre-vingt-deuxième, . . . . . 82d.              |
| Quatre-vingt-dix, . . . . . 90.               | Quatre-vingt-dixième, . . . . . 90th.              |
| Quatre-vingt-onze, . . . . . 91.              | Quatre-vingt-onzième, . . . . . 91st.              |
| Quatre-vingt-douze, &c., . . . . . 92.        | Quatre-vingt-douzième, . . . . . 92d.              |
| Cent, . . . . . 100.                          | Centième, . . . . . 100th.                         |
| Cent-un, . . . . . 101.                       | Cent et unième, . . . . . 101st.                   |
| Cent deux, . . . . . 102.                     | Cent-deuxième, . . . . . 102d.                     |
| Deux cents, . . . . . 200.                    | Deux centième, . . . . . 200th.                    |
| Deux cent-un, . . . . . 201.                  | Deux cent-unième, . . . . . 201st.                 |
| Deux cent-deux, . . . . . 202.                | Deux cent-deuxième, . . . . . 202d.                |
| Mille, . . . . . 1000.                        | Millième, . . . . . 1000th.                        |
| Deux milles, . . . . . 2000.                  | Deux millième, . . . . . 2000th.                   |
| Mil huit cent cinquante-deux, . . . . . 1852. | Mil huit cent cinquante-deuxième, . . . . . 1852d. |
| Un million, . . . . . A million.              | Millionième, . . . . . Millionth.                  |

# EXERCISES.

---

## 1.

Have you the bread? Have you the butter? Have you the wine? Have you the tea? Have you the coffee? Have you the milk? Have you my butter? Have you my milk? Have you your bread? Have you your wine? Have you my bread? Have you your tea? Have you my coffee? Have you the wine? Have you your butter?

---

## 2.

Have you the bread? I have the bread.—Have you my bread? —I have your bread.—Have you the ribbon? I have the ribbon. Have you my paper? I have your paper.—Have you your broom? I have my broom.—Have you my hat? I have your hat.—Have you the paper? I have the paper.—Have you my soap? I have your soap.—Have you the salt? I have the salt.—Have you your paper? I have my paper.—Have you my cotton? I have your cotton.—Have you the button? I have the button.—Have you my wine?

---

## 3.

Have you my cheese? I have your cheese.—Which knife have you? I have the pretty knife. Which coffee have you? I have the good coffee.—Which vinegar have you? I have my old vinegar.—Have you my pretty glass? I have your pretty glass.—Which plate have you? I have my ugly plate.—Have you my good coffee? I have your good coffee.—Have you my bad cotton? I have your good cotton.—Have you my good vinegar? I have

your bad vinegar.—Have you the beautiful ribbon? I have the beautiful ribbon.—Have you the old cheese? I have the old cheese.—What paper have you? I have my fine (*beau*) paper.—What coffee have you? I have the good coffee.—Have you my bad milk? I have your bad milk.

---

4.

Have you the pretty horse? I have it.—Have you my ugly dog? I have it.—Which candlestick have you? I have my pretty candlestick.—You have your pretty candlestick and my ugly gun.—What shoe have you? I have my good shoe and your good shoe.—Have you the gold? I have the gold.—Have you your silver? I have my silver.—Which iron have you? I have your good iron.—What wood have you? I have your fine wood.—Have you the steel? I have the steel.—Have you my copper? I have your copper.—Have you the cloth? I have the cloth.—Have you the good gun? I have the bad gun. Have you my pretty string? I have your pretty string.—Which gun have you? I have my beautiful gun.—Have you the good soap? I have the bad soap.—Have you the broom? Have you the pepper? Have you the milk? Have you my butter? Have you my wine? I have your wine and your tea.

---

5.

Have you the small hammer? I have it.—Have you my large cat? I have not your large cat; I have my small dog.—Have you your cap? I have not my cap.—Which desk have you? I have my small desk.—Which writing-book have you? I have my ugly writing-book.—Have you the book? I have the book.—Have you my pretty ink-stand? I have it.—Which umbrella have you? I have your good umbrella.—Have you my square basket? No, sir, I have not your square basket; I have my round basket.—Have you the large round hammer? No, sir, I have the small square hammer.—Have you the large cart? No, sir, I have not the large cart; I have the small cradle.—Have you the round cradle? No, sir, I have the square cradle.—

Which cat have you? I have the pretty cat.—Which soap have you? I have the fine soap.—I have the broom. I have the paper. I have the milk. I have your butter.—Have you my beautiful horse? I have your beautiful horse.

---

## 6.

Have you our dog's string? I have your dog's string.—Have you the large paper hat? I have not the large paper hat; I have the handsome wooden hat.—Have you my father's wooden horse? I have not your father's wooden horse; I have your brother's iron gun.—Which stool have you? I have the wooden stool.—Have you the steel gridiron? I have it.—Have you my large fan? I have your large fan and your pretty ribbon.—Which padlock have you? I have the copper padlock.—Have you my iron gun? I have your iron gun and your steel knife.—Which gun have you? We have the good gun.—Have you the fox? We have it not, (*ne Pavons.*)—Have you my brother's large steel gun? I have it not.—Which gun have you? I have your son's wooden gun.—Have you my boy's low stool? I have it.—Which hat have you? I have my husband's.—Have you the great cap? We have the great cap and the small hat.—Have you the high wooden stool? We have the low iron stool.—Have you my small paper horse? We have it not.—Have you the great round basket? No, sir, we have not the great round basket; we have the small square basket.—Have you your small cradle? We have our small cradle.

---

## 7.

Have I any thing good? You have the good corn.—Which wheat have you? We have the beautiful wheat.—Have you any thing bad? I have the bad hemp.—Which rye have you? We have our good rye.—Have you my good hay? We have your good hay.—Which hemp have you? We have our father's beautiful hemp.—Have you my brother's fine flax? No, sir, I have it not.—Have you the good rice and the fine sugar? No, sir.—Which tobacco have you? I have the bad tobacco.—Have you the grain?



I have it.—Have I my friend's good sugar? You have it not.—Which tobacco have you? We have your enemy's good tobacco.—Have you my large cat? I have not your large cat; I have my small dog.—Have I any thing ugly? You have the ugly fox.—Have we any thing? You have nothing.—Have you my friend's hat? We have not your friend's hat; we have your brother's handsome paper hat.—Which sugar have you? I have your enemy's fine sugar and your husband's small cap.—Have you any thing good? I have something good; I have the good dog.

---

## 8.

Has he my father's iron gun? He has not your father's iron gun; he has your son's wooden gun.—Has the boy his cradle? He has not his cradle, but he has his wooden horse.—Who has the good looking-glass? The young boy has it not, but your father's son has it.—Who has the strong stick? The child has it.—Has he my cousin's nephew? He has not your cousin's nephew, but he has his son-in-law.—Has the neighbour my comrade's dwarf? Your neighbour has not your comrade's dwarf, but he has his nephew's giant. Has the giant any thing pretty? He has his sick old man's small cat.—Has the strong giant your dwarf's good tobacco? He has it not, but he has his good rice and his large iron gun.—Have you my stick? I have not your stick, but I have your good fan and your small husband's copper padlock.—Have you any thing? I have the good sugar, the good milk, the good tea, and the good coffee.—Has he my good round basket? No, sir, he has not, but the small dwarf has.—Which horse has he? He has the beautiful strong horse.

---

## 9.

Have you your good wine? I have mine; I have not yours.—Has the old man his stick? He has not his; he has mine.—Which ribbon has the Jew? He has the king's string but not his ribbon.—Who has our king's ribbon? The duke has it.—Which king has the giant? He has our good king.—What soldier has the king? He has the strong

soldier.—Has the gentleman the count's beautiful horse? No, sir, he has it not, but he has his ugly cat.—Which captain has the colonel? He has your prince's captain.—Which coffee have you? We have your strong coffee.—Have you the horse? We have the horse and the cart, but we have not the man? Which negro have you? We have your good neighbour's young negro.—Has the giant his son? He has not his son, but he has his dwarf's son.—Have you the lord's good coffee and strong tea? No, sir, I have not his good coffee, but I have his fine bread.—Have you the good milk? No, sir, I have not the good milk, but I have the round cheese and the square basket.

---

## 10.

Hast thou thy bread and thy wine? I have not my bread, but I have my wine and my merchant's wine.—Hast thou thy small iron gun and thy large wooden horse? I have my small gun and my large horse, but thou has not thy gun.—Have you any thing? I have something; I have the huntsman's iron gun, the soldier's steel sabre and copper cannon, the joiner's piano, the carpenter's iron hammer, the servant's broom, the merchant's wine, the countryman's rice, and the coachman's horse.—Have you the lawyer's large sofa? I have not the lawyer's large sofa, but I have the gardener's beautiful cotton.—Have you your brother's piano? No sir, I have not my brother's piano, but I have his fine carpet.—Have you your neighbour's pretty curtain? I have not my neighbour's pretty curtain, but I have his beautiful leather hat.—Which shoemaker's leather have you? I have my tailor's shoemaker's leather.—Has the lawyer the fine horse? He has the ugly horse and the beautiful horse.

---

## 11.

What book have you? I have the great black book of my father.—Where is your dog? He is in my neighbour's garden.—Where is our cat? Our cat is in our father's pretty garden.—What cat has the merchant? He has the old neighbour's yellow cat?

Which ribbon have you ? I have the good red ribbon.—Have you the white horse ? No, sir, I have not the white horse, but I have the grey horse and the black horse.—Have you the strong green tea ? No, sir, I have it not, but I have the good black tea.—What book has the merchant ? The good old merchant has the red book, and the bad young merchant has the blue book.—Which bread have you ? I have your brother's white bread.—Has your husband my father's red wine ? No, sir, he has it not, but he has his son's green cat.—Which tobacco have you ? We have the old merchant's tobacco.—Is it good ? It is good and strong.—Is your dog black ? My dog is black, and my cat is black also.

---

## 12.

Are the fields green ? No, sir, they are not green, but they are yellow and blue.—Which fields are green ? Our neighbour's are green, but my father's are green also.—Have you the hay of the orchards ? No, sir, I have it not.—What sidewalks have you in your gardens ? I have good sidewalks and good paths.—Your torrent is rapid, and your banks are steep. The pond is large and deep, and the ditch is wide and long.—Is the sand in your kitchen-garden good ? It is not good, but it is not bad.—Which rocks have you ? I have the blue rocks, the yellow rocks, and the black rocks.—Are your father's fields cold ? They are not cold, but they are warm and green.—Have you the trees of the groves ? I have not the trees of the groves, but I have the trees of the parks.—Which ribbon have you ? I have your husband's ribbon.—Which ribbon is it ? It is the yellow and green ribbon in the path of my father's garden.—Are the paths wide ? They are wide and large.—Which hat have you ? I have your father's vermilion paper hat.

---

## 13.

Has the author my volume or thine ? He has not my volume, but he has thine.—Has the goldsmith any thing pretty ? He has nothing pretty but his nose and his hair.—Have you any white paper ? I have your white paper and

your brown paper.—Hast thou my hammer? No, sir, I have it not. Hast thou his red and black dog? I have not his dog, but I have his green cat.—Which pencil has the editor? He has his father's good black pencil.—Which lake is it? It is the large blue lake in your small park.—What have we good? We have nothing good, but we have something handsome and pretty.—What have you handsome and pretty? We have the admiral's handsome nest and the author's pretty orchards.—Which horses have we? We have the admiral's beautiful horses.—What horses are they? They are the horses of the duke.—What orchard is it? It is their orchard.—Which orchards are they? They are the green orchards of the sick gentleman.—What have they beautiful? They have their beautiful green parks, groves, marshes and gardens.

---

## 14.

Which pear have you? I have your good aunt's green pear.—Have you my sister's small copper key? No, sir, I have not your sister's small copper key, but I have your daughter's large iron key.—Which wine have you? I have the good red wine and the strong white wine.—Which bread have your women? They have the fine brown bread.—Which keys have you? I have the keys of the small gold lock.—Have you my good red pencil or my bad yellow pencil? I have not your good red pencil, but I have your bad yellow pencil and your niece's blue pencil.—Has the woman her son's or her pretty daughter's gold cherry? She has not the gold cherry, but she has the black nut.—Which black nut has she? She has the gardener's black nut and the admiral's black nut in the count's garden.—Has your mother my daughter's silver poniard, or your son's niece's steel sword? No, sir, but she has her father's daughter's copper razor.—Have you my nail or my hook? I have your nail, but not your hook.

---

## 15.

What pear have you? Have you the white, the green or the red pear? I have the white and the red pear.—What

sword has our neighbour's poor little child? He has the golden and silver sword.—Has your sister a good pear? She has a very good pear, and her brother has a good green pear also.—Which dog have I? You have your good neighbour's poor little dog.—Have you the pretty white and yellow birds? I have them not.—Which jewels have you? I have your good mother's pretty little jewels.—Has the count the poor old black negro's beautiful red birds? He has them not.—Who has them? We have them.—Have you your father's large blue cloak? I have not his large blue cloak; I have his pretty little green cloak.—Are the king's soldiers brave or cowardly? They are not cowardly. They are cowardly.—Who has the poor man's pretty brave cats? Our rich neighbour's dog has them.—What has he pretty? He has his pretty white horses.

---

## 16.

Is this horse active? No, sir, it is not active.—Has this instructive man his author's good little book? Yes, sir, he has it.—Who has my new red cloak? The little idle boy has it.—What have you good? I have these good candles and these candlesticks.—Who has our native negro? The great prince has him.—Have you my dog's silver string? No, sir, I have it not.—Has this man a beautiful wife? No, sir, his wife is not beautiful, but his daughter is very handsome, and his son is very brave and wise.—Has the captain his new black hat? Yes, sir, he has, and he has his white one also.—Is this little boy lively? No, sir, he is not, but his little sister is very lively.—Have you the new milk? No, sir, I have not, but my wife has.—What has your wife pretty? She has good sons and handsome daughters.—Has our cousin's son-in-law the beautiful white and black horses? He has them not, but our neighbour's son has them.—Have you the good new cheese or the bad old cheese? I have the good old cheese.

---

## 17.

Has the old captain my uncle's new boat? No, he has not your uncle's new boat, but he has his new washbasin.—

Whose (*de qui*) washbasin has the young man? He has the old captain's.—Whose letter has your father? He has my sister's short letter.—Has the young woman the candlewick, (*wick of the candle*?) No, but she has my mother's porcelain dishes and plates.—What saltcellars have you? I have my aunt's porcelain saltcellars.—Have you the girl's tablecloths? No, but I have my mother's.—Have you the fine wax (*la cire*) tapers of that pretty little woman? No, but I have those which that ugly old man has.—Have you the iron spit which my cousin has? No, but I have the silver key which your aunt has.—Where is the grey packthread? It is in the basket on the table.—Is that young man pale? No, he is very red.—Is he not very timid? No, but he is very idle.

---

## 18.

Has the young man this fork or that? He has neither this nor that; he has his uncle's.—Has the young woman this napkin or that bottle? She has this napkin, but she has not that bottle.—Have you the five porcelain cups which my mother has? I have not the five porcelain cups which your mother has, but I have the merchant's.—Have you my cousin's two silver coffee-pots? No but I have his gold watch.—Are those four old merchants attentive? Those four old merchants are not very attentive, but their sons are very lively.—Have you your old gold watch or your uncle's? I have mine and uncle has his.—Are the banks of the river steep? Yes and the river is very rapid.—Is the margin of that book wide? Yes, it is wide and beautiful.—Is the key in the lock? No, the key is in that box.—Are gold keys good? Yes, gold keys are very good.—Have you mine? No, but I have your merchant's.

---

## 19.

Who has the merchant's fork? The countryman has had his silver fork, and the tailor has had his gold one, (*celle d'or*).—Who has been hungry? My good father has been hungry.—Has anybody been thirsty? Nobody has been thirsty, but somebody has been very

sleepy. Are those sixteen gold spoons in the wooden box? No, they are in the leather box.—Is the merchant right? Yes, he is right, and consequently (*par consequence*) you are wrong.—Has anybody had the same white cups which my uncle has had? Nobody has had the same white cups which your uncle has had, but somebody has had the same black chairs.—Has the countryman had this red table or that green chair? He has neither had this red table nor that chair.—Is the young man hungry or thirsty? He is neither hungry nor thirsty.—Has anybody been afraid? Nobody has been afraid.—Who has been cold? That young man has been cold.

---

 20

Have you any lead? Yes, I have some lead.—Has your father any iron? Yes, he has some iron.—Have the merchants any copper? Yes, they have some copper.—There is some sulphur in that tin box.—Is there (*ya-t-il*) any bronze in that wooden box? No, but there is some silver in that basket.—What is there (*qu'y a-t-il*) on that table? There is a white napkin on that table.—What is there beautiful on those chairs? There are some beautiful cups on those chairs.—Are there any branches on that cherry-tree? Yes, there are some branches on that cherry-tree.—Is the trunk of that apple-tree big? Yes, the trunk of that apple-tree is very big, but that of the walnut-tree is neither big nor small.—Where has there been any cork? There has been some cork in that basket and some ivy on that tree (*arbre, m.*)—Has anybody been idle? Nobody has been idle; on the contrary (*au contraire*) these good boys have been very attentive.—Where is there any thing good? There is something good in my uncle's garden.

---

 21.

Have you any good sacks? Yes, I have some good leather sacks.—Has your father any good vases? Yes, he has some good vases.—Has he any porcelain vases? He has some red porcelain vases.—Has your father's neighbour any goblets? He has some green glass goblets.—Are there any country-

men among (*parmi*) the merchant's friends? Yes, there are ten countrymen among his friends.—Are there any great mirrors in your room? Yes, there are four great mirrors in my room.—What is there on that chair? There are two blue velvet cushions on that chair.—Is the bust of the president (*président*) good? No, but his portrait in oil (*à l'huile*) is very good.—What kind of (*Quelle sorte de*) an umbrella (omit the *an* in French) has the young man? He has a fine silk umbrella.—What kind of a curtain is there before (*devant*) that picture? There is a red silk curtain before that picture.—What veil has your sister? She has a veil which has a big knot in the middle (*au milieu*).

---

## 22.

Have you any figs? I have some.—Has your cousin any oranges? He has some.—Has he any pears also? He has some also.—Who has any plums? Somebody has some.—Who has any fine large grapes? Your old neighbor has some.—Has he any? He has some.—Has he many apples? He has a great many.—Has he had many peaches? He has had a great many.—Who has had many hazlenuts? The carpenter has had a great many.—Have you had almonds enough? Yes, I have enough.—Has the tailor cloth enough? Yes, he has enough.—Has the old man filberts enough? Yes, he has enough.—Are these oranges good enough for (*pour*) your pretty little sister? No, but they are good enough for yours.—Are there candles enough before the mirror? Yes, there are three candles before the mirror and one chandelier in the middle of the room.—What sort of peaches are there on that plate? There are some good peaches on that plate.—Are there any medlars among those pears? No, but there are some red gooseberries among those grapes.

---

## 23.

Have you any cakes? I have not any.—Have you any fritters for dinner? No, I have not any.—Did you have any fish for breakfast? I did not have any.—Who had any honey for supper? The old man had some, but the young man had not any



(*eu* is placed after *pas*.)—Have you any slices of good ham for my supper? I have two.—Has the merchant any good roast meat for his nephew? No, but he has three slices of boiled meat.—Has he a good deal of good soap? He has a good deal.—Has he many good red apples? (Remember that adjectives of colour follow the noun.) He has not many.—How many red apples has he? He has three.—Has he too much honey for a good dessert? He has too much.—Is there too much pork on that table for a good dinner? Yes, there is too much pork for a general dinner, and there is not roast meat enough.—Has the dog had a good morsel of bread? Yes, and the cat has had a good morsel of meat.

---

## 24.

What do you wish for? I wish for a good pencil.—What does your father wish for? He wishes for some thread.—Do you wish for some brushes? Yes, we wish for some.—Does the merchant wish for some good tongs? No, he does not wish for any.—Do you wish for a little thread? Yes, we wish for a little.—What does your cousin wish for? He wishes for some planes, some baskets, and two caldrons.—Do those children wish for a little meat? They wish for a great deal.—Do they wish for some pies? They wish for a great many.—Do you wish for meat enough for your uncle's dinner? I wish for enough for my uncle's dinner, and a little for his nephew's dinner.—Do you wish for some oranges for your dessert? Yes I wish for some? How many do you wish for? I wish for five.—What sort of oranges do you wish for? I wish for some good yellow oranges which are very sweet.—Are the oranges which your uncle has very sweet? Yes, they are very sweet, and there are some which are very big too.—How many cents are there in a dollar? There are a hundred cents in a dollar.

---

## 25.

Have you a desire to speak? Yes, I have a desire to speak.—To whom (*a qui*) have you a desire to speak? I have a desire to speak to your nephew.—Why have you a

desire to speak to my nephew ? Because I need to speak to him.—Has the carpenter *any* need of cutting ( $\Rightarrow$  to cut—omit *any* before need) this table ? No, he has no need of cutting it.—Do you wish to tear that cloth ? No, I do not wish to tear it.—Has the young man a desire to break his father's fine porcelain jars ? No, he has no desire to break them.—Does the old man wish to deceive his son ? No he does not wish to deceive him, for he has no son.—How many carts has the countryman ? He has not any carts.—What kind of chairs has the gardener ? He has some stone chairs and some wooden chairs.—Are there any yellow chairs among all (*lout*) these chairs ? Yes, there are some.—Are there any black chairs too ? Yes, there are fourteen.—Are there any oil pictures in your room ? Yes, there are fifteen.

---

 26.

Is the dinner on the table ? Yes, dinner is on the table.—Is the book under the chair ? No, it is on the chair.—Is it on it ? No it is under it.—What is there upon it ? There is nothing upon it, but there is something under it.—Where do you wish to go ? I wish to go to my uncle's.—Do you wish to go to your uncle's or to my father's ? I do not wish to go to my uncle's nor to your father's ; I wish to go to that young man's.—Does your cousin wish to go anywhere ? He does not wish to go anywhere.—Who wishes to go to your nephew's ? The old man wishes to go there.—Do you wish to speak to that old man ? No, but I wish to go to his house.—Has the countryman a desire to cultivate my fields (*le champ*) ? He has not any desire to cultivate your fields, but he has a great desire (omit the *a*) to cultivate his own. Why does he wish to sow that big field ? Because he *is in want of* money.—Why do you wish this knife ? In order to (*pour*) cut my bread.—Why do you plant grain ? In order to reap it.—Will you lift up your chair ? Why ? In order not to tear my dress.

---

 27.

. What has the merchant ? He has a few knives, and three boxes full (*plein*) of goods.—What have these old men that

is pretty? They have nothing pretty, but they have several ugly hats.—Are there not several dogs in the street (*la rue*)? No, there are no dogs in the street, but there are several in the middle of the square (*la place*).—Are there any cats among those dogs? There are several.—What sort of trees (*arbre le*) are there before your house? There are two apple-trees and several cherry-trees.—Among all your books are there not any that are good? There are some that are good and some that are very bad.—Why does that old man wish to save his dog? He wishes to save him in order to carry him to his son.—Have you a desire to fish? Yes, but there are no fish in the river.—How many do you wish to carry home? I wish to carry home a few.—What do you wish to carry home? I do not wish to carry any thing home.—Do you love to plant? No, I love to reap.

---

## 28.

What lesson is this? This is the twenty-eighth lesson.—Have you taken away my books? No, I have not taken away your books.—Has your sister taken away her combs? No, she has not taken them away.—Has the servant driven away those dogs? He has driven them away, and he has driven away those cats too.—Why do you wish to spoil my dress? I do not wish to spoil your dress, but you have spoiled all mine.—Have you gained much money? I have not gained much, but my brother has gained a great deal.—Will this man pay his debts? Yes he is willing to pay his, but he is not willing to pay his brother's.—What kind of sentiments has that old man? He has bad sentiments, but his son has good ones.—How many birds have you killed? I have only killed a few.—Have you kept my birds? Yes, I have kept them; here they are (*les voies*).—Here are your birds, will you kill them? No, for I have not paid for them.—(Observe that *payer* means to pay for as well as to pay).—Have you wounded these birds? No I have killed them.—Have you many? No, I have only a few.

## 29.

What lesson is this? This is the twenty-ninth lesson.—What sort of a lesson is it? It is (use *ce* before *est*, instead of *elle*) a very interesting lesson.—Have you finished it? No, I have not yet finished it, for I have not done my exercise.—Do you like to do these exercises? Not much, they are too dull (*ennuyeux*).—But are they not very useful? I do not know (*je ne sais pas*).—Of what (*de quoi*) are you speaking? I am speaking of those dull exercises.

Has the countryman embellished his gardens? No, he has not embellished them.—Have you punished your daughter? I have punished her.—Has the physician healed his servant? He has healed him.—Has the great misfortune softened the character (*le caractère*) of your friend? No, but the happiness of his children has softened it (*for him*).—Do you wish to do another exercise? Yes, I wish to do another.—Has another man killed your dog? No, but somebody has killed another dog.—Who has enriched your cousin? A miracle has enriched him.

## 30.

What are you doing? I am not doing anything (*doing nothing*).—Do you love to do nothing? (Put the *rien* before the verb).—Yes, I love to do nothing.—You are lazy then (*donc*).—No, I am not lazy; I love to talk.—Is your cousin making another book? Yes, he is making several others.—Is he making good books? He is making some good and some bad ones.—Which are the good books? The good books are blank books (*un livre en blanc*): all his other books are bad.—Does he make as many bad books as his father? He makes as many as he.—Does he make as many bad books as good ones? No, for some of the books which he makes are blank books.—Has he all the vices of his age? Yes, and he has other vices also.—Has a man of wit as many advantages as obstacles? Yes, for wit is a great obstacle.—You have not any great obstacles then. Why not? Where is your wit? I don't know.—Is there any pleasure in this world? Yes, for there is as much happiness as misfortunes in this world.—Have you many more of these exercises? I have not many more.—I have finished this.

## 31.

Have you seen my brother? I have seen him.—Where did you see him? (Same form of the verb in French.)—I saw him at his father's.—Do you see him any longer? I am no longer at your father's, and consequently I do not see him any longer.—What do these men receive? They receive the interest of their money.—Where is their money? In a great box at the merchant's.—Do you see as much art and caprice in this pretty little woman? Pretty little women never have either art or caprice.—Of what kind of women are you speaking? I only speak of pretty women. Is there as much order as disorder in that chamber? There is a great deal of disorder in that chamber, and very little order.—The looking-glass is under the table, and the table is on the bed.—The washbasin is in the fireplace (*la cheminée*), and the fire is in the middle of the room. There is (*voilà*) order for you.—Are there any flowers in your father's garden? There were (*a eu*) flowers in his garden formerly (*autrefois*), but now (*maintenant*) there are no more.

---

## 32.

Do you conceive that (*cela*?) Yes, I conceive it.—We conceive a great many things that we cannot say. Can you conceive that? Yes, I can conceive it very easily (*facilement*). How much does that man owe you? I cannot tell you yet (*encore*), but I can tell you another thing (*la chose*).—What thing can you tell me? I owe him fifty dollars.—Has that girl as much beauty as artlessness? She has neither beauty nor artlessness, but she has a great deal of vivacity.—Has your cousin as much sensibility as sincerity? No, but she has as much docility as piety.—Has she as much love for goodness as respect for piety? What is the difference (*la différence*) between (*entre*) goodness and piety? (Repeat the article before the abstract nouns.)—I cannot tell you.—Can you speak to him? No, I cannot speak to him.—(Use *je ne puis* rather than *je ne peux pas*).—Can you speak to him or to my father? I can speak neither to him nor to your father.

## 33.

What do you foresee? I foresee the dangers to which you are exposed (*exposer*), and you do not foresee them.—Does your brother foresee the dangers to which he is exposed? He does not (say *il ne les prévoit pas*, repeating in the answer the verb of the question.)—How can he foresee them? He has too much pride to foresee them. Do you know how to write (*écrire, écrivant, écrit*)? Yes, I know how to write.—Is your mother loved? Yes, she is loved by (*de*) all her children.—Is your uncle loved? He is not loved as much as she is loved.—Is pride loved? No, but truth is (*la vérité l'est*)—Do my brothers know that you know how to write? They do not know that I know how to write.—Is your brother as frivolous as your cousin? He is more frivolous than he.—Is there more frivolousness than lightness in his character (*le caractère*)? There is as much frivolousness as lightness.—Is the friendship of a cousin as strong as that of an uncle? No, it is not as strong.—Is the love of a mother as strong as that of an aunt? It is more so.

---

## 34.

Have you more bread than milk? I have more bread than milk. I have less bread than milk.—Have you as much as I? I have less than you, but your servant has quite as much as you.—Has he quite as much as my father? He has less than your father.—Have you my horse or my cart? I have both.—Have you the soap or the cheese? I have both.—Have you the bottle or the candle? I have both. I have neither.—Do you speak German? No, but I speak Spanish. Are you a German? (Omit the *a* in French.)—No, I am a Greek.—Is your father a Spaniard? No, but he speaks Spanish.—Does he speak Latin? Yes, and he speaks Russian too.—Do you know the Portuguese (man)? No, but I know Portuguese.—Do you know German? No, but I know the German.—What does the German want? He wants a cloth cloak. Does he want something? He does not want any thing.—What does the girl want for her wedding? She wants a good dowry.—What does the bachelor want? He wants a wife.

## 35.

Will this mother love her child—She will love it.—Will this lesson have anything new in it?—It will have some new words.—Will these new words have anything remarkable? They will have nothing remarkable.—When shall we have a new lesson? We shall have a new lesson to-morrow.—Will you keep necessary books for our lessons at your house? My father will keep them for us.—Is this man as avaricious as his neighbour? He is more avaricious than his neighbour.—Whose hat is the smallest? (say, who has the smallest hat?) Mine is small, but yours is smaller than mine.—Is your knife larger than mine? It is larger than yours?—Have you a larger knife than I (*moi*)? I have a large one, but you have a larger one.—What shall you do to-morrow? I shall do nothing to-morrow, but I shall do a great deal the day after to-morrow.—Did you see my uncle last week? I saw him last month, but I had no time to see him (*le temps de le voir*) last week.

## 36.

Will this lesson be as useful as the last (*le dernier-e*)? It will be more useful than the last.—Will there be more words in it? There will be words enough.—Shall you be glad when you have finished (say, shall have) these exercises? I shall be very glad. What shall you do (*ferez-vous*) when you have finished them? (say, shall have.) I shall begin Ollendorff's large work.—Do you expect to find it (*comptez-vous le trouver*) very interesting? Study (*l'étude*, f., say, the study) is always interesting, but it is sometimes very difficult too, and I expect to find this excellent volume interesting, but difficult. Shall you unite the two studies? I shall unite them if I can.—Will your mother punish you if you neglect your lessons? She will punish me.—Who is sick at your house? Nobody is sick at our house, but somebody is sick at our neighbour's.—Which is the prettiest of all these knives? Your sister's is the prettiest, but mine is the biggest.—Will these fields be sterile? No, they will be green and fertile.—Will this porcelain jar be more fragile than that glass one? (omit one.)—It will not be so fragile, but it will be more commodious.

## 37.

When shall you go home ? I shall go home to-morrow.—Will your father go home to-morrow also ? No, he will go home the day after to-morrow.—Where will your brothers go next month ? They will go into the country ? (*à la campagne*).—For what will they go into the country ? They will go into the country in order to sow some grain.—Will you wait for me to-morrow morning at your father's ? I shall wait for you.—Did you wait for me often last month ? I waited for you so often that (*qu'*) I will not wait for you any longer.—Shall you hear my cousin before next week ? No, I shall not hear him before next month.—What sort of a present shall you give (*donner*) him ? I shall give him the best book in (of) the house.—Shall you not be afraid of losing your book ? No, for books are things which we never (*jamais*) lose when we study (*étudier*) them well.—Is your father's memory as good as your uncle's ? It is better (*meilleur*).—Will that girl have any fortune ? She will have some if we have peace (say, the peace) and she will have none if we have war (the war).

---

## 38.

When will you come to my house ? I will come next week. Will your neighbour come too ? My neighbour will come too.—Will he be able to come ? He will be able to come if he finishes his lesson in time (*à temps*).—Will he be able to finish it in time ? Yes, for he is very active.—Active with his legs (*la jambe*) ? No, with his hands (*la main*).—Will you come to the school in the morning ? No, but I will come in the evening.—Where is the school ? In a pretty little room.—Is it in the street ? No, it is neither in the street nor in the square ; it is in the barn.—Is there any window to that barn ? No, but there is a door.—Are the streets of all the cities as large as those of the capital ? No, they are not so large.—Are there any extremely large ? There are some extremely large and some extremely small.—Have you any thing to do ? I have nothing to do.—Have you any letters to write ? I have no letters to write.—Have you anything to break ? I have something to break.—What have you to break ? I have an iron pitcher to break.



## 39.

What do you say ? I say that you are very lazy. Will not your master (*le maître*) say the same thing of you ? I don't know. I will tell you what (*ce que*) he will say. What will he say ? He will say that you remained too long in your chamber (*restir* takes *être* for auxiliary). Will he come with us ? He will come with us in an instant. What o'clock is it ? It is nine o'clock. What o'clock will it be when he comes to our house ? It will be half-past ten. No, he will come at daybreak. Will he be there all night ? No, he will be there half an hour. How long will your brother remain at home ? He will remain there two hours and a half.—At what o'clock will you come to see me to-morrow ? I will come to see you at noon.—Is sunrise as beautiful as sunset ? I don't know, I never saw sunrise.—Are there many books in your father's library ? Yes, but there is more good meat in his kitchen.—How many minutes are there in an hour ? There are sixty minutes in an hour.

---

## 40.

What are you writing ? I am writing my fortieth exercise.—Will it be a long one ? It will be a very short and easy one.—Shall you finish it to-day ? I shall write all my exercises to-day. What shall you write when you have written your exercises ? I shall write letters to my French friends.—Do you intend to write to your father very often ? I intend to write to him twice a month (*par mois*).—And I shall write to mine three times a week.—Which is the finest seasons ? The autumn is the finest season, for there is good fruits in autumn.—And there are fine flowers in summer ? Yes, but flowers are not as good as fruit.—Is the water good in this street ? The water is good, but the air is bad.—Are there four seasons in America ? No, there are only three seasons ! winter, summer, and autumn.—When you have written your letters, what do you intend to do ? I intend to write only two this morning, and this evening I shall write the others.—Do you write only two a day ? Now I only write two, but soon I intend to write two and a half.—At what o'clock will you have done writing (*fini d'écrire*) ? At four o'clock.

## 41.

Why does your father go into the country? He goes there to amuse himself.—Will he amuse himself there with his books? No, he will amuse himself there with his horses and his dogs.—How many dogs has he? He has ten fine black dogs, but he has only three horses.—Are his horses as good as his dogs? They are just as good as his dogs, but they are not so handsome.—Will he exercise his horses as much as his dogs? Not altogether (*pas tout à fait*) so much.—Of what is your brother thinking? He is thinking of correcting his bad exercises in order to render them good.—Does your master question you about your exercises? Yes, and he pronounces all the difficult words for us.—When you have finished (put the auxiliary in the future) your exercises, what shall you do? I shall write some more to please (*faire du plaisir à*) my mother.—Do you load your memory with words, (*de mots*)? I do not load my memory with words, but I fill my book with them (*en*.)

## 42

What does your father send you? He sends me a new broom.—Why does he send you a new broom? He sends me a new broom to sweep my room with.—Shall you sweep it? No, my servant will sweep it for me, and then I shall send the broom to my cousin.—What will he do with it? He will make a brush of it.—Will your sisters amuse themselves in the country? They will amuse themselves there as well as they can.—Will your nephew amuse himself there? He will amuse himself as well as he can, for he amuses himself everywhere (*partout*).—Is your neighbour fatigued? Yes, he is very much fatigued; it is for that (*c'est pour cela*) that he remains at home.—Will you send him your pretty little dogs to amuse him? No, I cannot send them now, but I shall be ready to send them to-morrow.—Will he be ready to receive them? I believe so (*je crois que oui*).—Do you expect to remain at home long (*long-temps*)? Not as long as yesterday.—I shall be ready to go out soon.—I will wait for you then very gladly.

## 43.

Whose book is that? It is my father's.—Whose books are those? They are my uncle's.—Are these your uncle's shoes? No, they are my aunt's.—Are these your brother's penknives? No, they are my sisters.—Who is speaking to your father? My uncle is speaking to him.—Is it your father that is speaking to him? No, it is my uncle.—Who sent you that comb? It was my father that sent it to me.—Is your brother's mouth large? Yes, his mouth is large, and his eyes are small. Is his head round? Yes, his head is round, and his body is long.—Are his cheeks red? No, his cheeks are not red, they are white.—Who has long arms? That child has long arms, and his sister has long feet.—Who has black eyelids? That pretty little girl has black eyelids and grey eyes.—Who has small fingers? The boy has small fingers and big feet.—Who has long ears? Somebody, that has not learned his lesson, has long ears and an ugly face.

---

## 44.

To whom were you speaking when I saw you this morning? I was speaking to my cousin, who has black eyes.—What were you saying to her? I was saying to her that black eyes are very handsome.—What did you use to do when you were in the country last winter? I used to eat.—And then (*puis*)? I used to sleep.—Did you go to walk sometimes (*quelquefois*)? I used to go to walk every morning at six o'clock.—Was it very cold (*faire froid*)? It was usually very cold, but I used to get warm (*se chauffer*) by walking fast (*en marchant vite*).—What did your sister use to do? She used to knit, and then we used to chat together two or three hours.—Is there any thing surprising in all that (*tout cela*)? No, all that is very natural.—Are these wearisome little exercises useful? Yes, they are as useful as they are wearisome.—They are indispensable then? Yes, they are wholly (*tout à fait*) indispensable.—Will you buy some cambric? Yes, if you will sell me some cheap.—Well, I will sell you some very cheap if you will buy a good deal. I usually buy a good deal.

## 45.

What would you do if you were in my place (*à ma place*)? I would write him a long letter.—Would he answer it? I do not know whether (*si*) he would answer it or not, but at least he would read it. Well (*eh bien*), here is (*voici*) some paper, now what shall I say? I shall begin by saying (infinitive). I did not think you so impertinent when I saw you for the first time (*fois*, *f*), but I soon found that you were skilful in concealing (infinitive) your true character.—Send me back all the letters I have written you, and I will have nothing more to do with you.—What would you say if you were to receive (imp. ind.) such a letter? I would tear it up and throw it in the fire (*au feu*).—Well then, why do you wish me to write a letter that only deserves to be torn up? Because I should like to see you do a foolish thing (*une sottise*).—You are very kind: I will take good care not to (*se garder bien de*) follow your advice (*suivre vos conseils*.)

---

## 46.

Must I speak? Yes, you must speak immediately.—To whom must I speak? You must speak to everybody.—My voice is not strong enough to speak to everybody.—I am very sorry for it (*en*.) What do you wish me to do? I wish you to finish your lesson.—Must I finish it immediately? It is to be wished that you should finish (pres. subj.) it immediately.—How does your brother behave towards his friends? He behaves well towards everybody. Would you go towards the house if you were not tired? No, I would go towards the river. Is that wine-bottle full of wine? No, but this coffee cup is full of coffee.—What kind of weather will it be to-morrow? The weather will be good.—What must we do to please our friends? We must behave well towards them and towards everybody.—You must consult the lawyer about your business.—I would consult him if I could.—You must narrate that fact to my sister rather than to my father.—I am too awkward to narrate it.—You must do it for me. I will, if you will be attentive.—I will be very attentive, for I love variety.

## 47.

What do you want ? I want some apples.—What does he (*lui*) want ? He wants some good shoes to take a walk every morning.—Does he want more than one pair ? No, he only wants one pair.—Does he want many ? Yes, he wants many.—If he wants some, he must go away, for there are no good ones here.—Do you know any thing about them ? Yes, I know a great deal about them.—I do not see, however, that you know much about them.—You can ask your brother and trust to him.—My brother is very busy in having his exercises written : he cannot attend to it (*s'en occuper*).—What do you advise me to do ? I advise you to run away.—From what should I run away ? You must run away from that man who is very wicked.—Did you hear the new opera last night ? I heard half of it.—Which part did you hear ? I heard the first part, in which (*où*) there is a fine trait of gratitude, but very bad music.

## 48.

Do you grant me that ? Yes, I grant it, but my brother will never grant it.—Why will he not grant it ? Because he cannot grant what he does not approve.—Does he not agree to it ? No, he does not agree to it.—Who agrees to it ? Everybody (*tout le monde*) agrees to it, but he will not agree to it.—Did you agree about the price ? First (*d'abord*) we agreed about the price, then (*puis*) when I offered him the money he refused to accept it.—What are people doing in that square ? They are chatting. About what are they chatting ? If you wish to know, you must apply to that young man.—Are you satisfied with his answer ? Yes, I am very easily satisfied.—And your brother hardly ever is.—How does wood sell this year ? Wood is dear : it sells for a dollar a foot.—Do they sell a great deal ? Yes, for everybody needs fire.—Do you write a great deal at your house ? No, but they read a great deal.—What news was there last night ? He said that you were very industrious.—I grant you that is something very new.

## 49.

I saw him as soon as I entered.—What was he doing? He was writing a letter, but, as soon as he saw me, he dropped his pen and ran towards me with open arms.—What did you say when you saw that? I begged him to wait an instant, for I was afraid of waking my brother who was sleeping in the next room.—I shut the door, and then we could talk at our ease (*d notre aise*).—Who was he? He was a young Italian who had distinguished himself (*pret. ind.*) in the campaign of forty-eight.—He was only sixteen years old when he entered the army, and he was received there as well as if he had been an old general.—Has he served long? Not very long, but he soon arrived at the highest rank.—Did you attend (*pret. ind.*) the concert last evening? Yes I attended it.—Did your brother attend it? No, he did not attend it, but his wife did (repeat the principal verb: *do* in this sense is never translated by *faire*.)

---

## 50.

What do you wish me to do? I wish you to speak to your uncle, and tell him that I would come and see him if I could find the time.—Is it necessary for you to write a letter to-day? No, it will be necessary for me to write it to-morrow.—Was it necessary for him to write that letter? No, but it was necessary for his uncle to write it.—What kind of weather will it be to-morrow? It will be dull (cloudy) weather.—Will there be many clouds? How would you have (*vouloir, ind. pres.*) me tell you whether (*si*) there will be many clouds or no? I beg you not to get angry (*se facher*), I grant that you cannot tell.—What would you have me discover to you? A great secret.—I cannot, and I beg you not to ask it of me.—What did the old man do when he saw a soldier? He put his hat on.—Where must you be to-morrow morning? I must be at my father's.—Are there any pictures at your father's? There are some fine pictures of Raphael there.—What must one do in order to see them? One must ask permission to see them.

## 51.

For what is iron good? Iron is good for many purposes.—For what are gold and silver good? Gold and silver are good to buy other things with.—Which is the worse quality, folly or credulity? Folly and credulity are both very bad.—Is man as much inclined to credulity as woman? Man is not generally as much inclined to credulity as woman, but some men are.—Is man ever the dupe of his credulity? Yes, he is very often.—How can man subdue his vices? If man limits his desires, he will naturally limit his vices.—Is desire a vice? Yes, when it is not limited by reason. Is that man's character amiable? No, it is not amiable.—Does strength of character absolve us from the duties of equality? No, for a certain degree of equality is a law of nature.—Do you intend to obviate those inconveniences? I shall obviate those inconveniences, when you limit your desires.—I will absolve you from the necessity.—The difficulty still remains.—I do not see it. So much the worse (*tant pis*) for you.

---

## 52.

Where is Italy? Italy is a beautiful country of the south of Europe, in the Mediterranean Sea, between Greece and Spain.—Is France as beautiful as Italy? France is not so beautiful as Italy.—In what part of Europe is Sweden? Sweden is a cold country in the north of Europe.—Where is your cousin? He is in Poland.—What are you saying about the king of Prussia? I say that his head is not very strong.—Which are the best wines of Europe? There are many excellent wines in Europe.—Are the wines of Spain good? The wines of Spain are very good, but those of France are better.—Are all French wines good? No, but the greater part (*la plupart*) of French wines are good.—Whence were you coming last week when I met (*rencontrer*) you in the street? I had just come from Italy where I had passed the winter.—Whither do you intend to go next winter? I intend to go to (*en*) Italy.—Shall you not go to (*à*) Paris? No I shall not go to (*en*) France, I shall go to England.—You will go to (*à*) London then? No, to Liverpool.

## 53.

Have I given you the book which I promised you ? Yes, you have given it to me.—Did I not tell you so yesterday ? I do not remember.—Do you write often such long letters ? Yes, do you read them ? Not always.—When did I tell you that I intended to go to the country ? Next month.—Was (pres.) it you that gave me that horse ? No, it was my father.—Was it your uncle that wrote that book ? No, it was my aunt.—Of what book do you think I am speaking ? I believe that you are speaking of that of which my cousin gave you the title (*le titre*).—Are the men of whom we are speaking ready to start ? Those of whom I spoke to you are ready to start, but those of whom you spoke to me are not.—Have you all that you need ? I have many things that I need, but there are many other things which I need, which I have not got.—When will the reaper be ready to reap the corn ? Towards noon.—Why did you get up (*se lever*) early this morning ? I got up early on purpose to see you.

## 54.

Do you eat while writing ? No, but you sleep while reading. Yes while reading your books.—Do you know my books ? Yes I know them by sight, I saw them on going into the grocer's to buy some coffee.—How much did you pay for your coffee ? I paid him two dollars for it.—Where is it then ? I have drunk it all up.—Do you walk quick when you are in the country ? I walk quick in going to dinner, but very slow afterwards.—Is it far (*y-a-t-il loin*) to the place where you dine ? Yes, it is very far. (*Is*, in speaking of distance between, is expressed *oy il y a*.) Shall we soon be in Paris ? Not very soon, for it is still a great way off.—Is it before or behind us ? Paris is before us and a great way off, but Rouen is behind and very near.—Is that the troublesome old man of whom you spoke to me ? When did I speak to you about (*de*) a troublesome old man ? Yesterday.—Of whom ought I to take leave before I set out ? You ought to take leave of all your friends.—Ought I to buy those goods ? How much ought I to pay for them ? You ought to pay six sous for them.



## 55.

Give me my hat, for (*car*) I wish to go out. Here it is (*le voici*).—Give that man some pens and paper, for he has a letter to (*à*) write. He may write as many letters as he pleases, that will not prevent me from saying that he is lazy.—How many letters must one write a day, not to be lazy? As for me, I write six a day, and some times ten.—Anybody can do that: you must do as I do.—And how many do you write? Not one.—And you are not lazy? On the contrary (*au contraire*) I am very industrious, for I sleep twelve hours a day, eat six, and amuse myself the rest of the time as well as I can.—What kind of weather is it? It snows and blows.—What fine weather!—What a fine coat! How much did you pay for it? I paid six dollars a yard for the cloth.—Speak to that man. I cannot speak to him.—Write to him then. I am too lazy to write to anybody whatever (*à qui que ce soit*).—Tell your brother to write to him then,—He may write to him if he chooses, but I shall not tell him.

## 56.

What fine weather this is! Do you think so? I do not.—What a fine house this is! Well (*ch bien*), buy it then.—Since you wish me to buy it, I will. You must be very obliging (*complaisant*) since you are so ready to do what one tells you. What were you just saying? I was not saying anything.—I am very glad of it, for I have something very interesting to say.—What is it? That your pretty cousin is just arrived.—How many exercises have you written? I have translated (*traduire*) fifty-five, and I am translating the fifty sixth, and have written sixty of my own invention.—Which are the most useful? It is not enough to (*que de*) translate, you must compose exercises of your own.—Why so? Because that is the only way of learning how to express your own ideas.—Shall I learn in (*de*) that way? Yes, if you compose a great many, and are very attentive. You must also repeat your vocabularies every day till (*jusqu'à ce que*) you know (*subj.*) them perfectly.—That is too tedious. Leave off (*cesser de*) studying then, for you will never learn.

# LE POULET.

---

LES BATTUS PAIENT L'AMENDE.

---

## PERSONAGES.

M. D'ORVILLE, *malade.* | LA BRIE, } *laquais de M. D'Orville.*  
M. FREMONT, *médecin.* | COMTOIS, }

*La Scène est chez M. D'Orville.*

## SCENE I.

M. D'ORVILLE, COMTOIS, LA BRIE.

*D'Orv.* Parbleu, je suis bien fatigué ! Je meurs de faim. Et mon poulet, La Brie ?

*La Brie.* Monsieur, vous allez l'avoir tout-à-l'heure.

*D'Orv.* Pourquoi Comtois n'y est-il pas allé ?

*Comt.* Monsieur, il fallait bien être auprès de vous pour vous habiller. Nous allons mettre le couvert.

*D'Orv.* Ils ne finiront pas. Est-ce qu'il ne peut pas faire cela tout seul ? Allons, va-t-en.

*Comt.* J'y vais, j'y vais.

*D'Orv.* Je tombe d'inanition. Donnez-moi un fauteuil. (*Il s'assied.*) Allons, finissez donc.

*La Brie.* Je vais mettre la table devant vous. (*Il l'approche.*) Je m'en vais chercher du pain.

*D'Orv.* Je crois qu'ils me feront mourir d'impatience.

*La Brie.* Déployez toujours votre serviette pour ne pas perdre de temps.

---

## SCENE II.

M. D'ORVILLE.

Je n'en puis plus ! je m'endors de fatigue et de faiblesse. (*Il s'endort et ronfle.*)

## SCENE III.

M. D'ORVILLE, LA BRIE, COMTOIS *portant le poulet.*

*La Brie.* Apporte du pain.

*Comt.* Il y en a là : j'apporte le poulet. Quoi ! il dort déjà ?

*La Brie.* Je ne fais pourtant que de le quitter.

*Comt.* Mais son poulet va se refroidir. Réveille-le.

*La Brie.* Moi ? je ne m'y joue pas ; il crierait comme un aigle.

*Comt.* Comment ferons-nous ?

*La Brie.* Je n'en sais rien. Cela nous fera diner à je ne sais quelle heure, et je meurs de faim.

*Comt.* Et moi aussi. Ma foi, je m'en vais l'éveiller.

*La Brie.* Tu n'en viendra jamais à bout.

*Comt. (criant)* Monsieur !

*La Brie.* Oui, oui ; vois comme il remue. Il n'en ronfle que plus fort.

*Comt.* Quel diable d'homme ! Coupe le poulet ; en cas qu'il se réveille, ce sera toujours autant de fait.

*La Brie.* Oui, et il sera plus froid ; je ne m'y joue pas.

*Comt.* Eh-bien, je m'en vais le couper, moi. (*Il coupe une cuisse.*) Tiens, vois comme cela sent bon.

*La Brie.* Je n'ai pas besoin de sentir pour avoir encore plus de faim.

*Comt.* Ma foi j'ai envie de manger cette cuisse-là. Monsieur Frémont lui a ordonné de ne manger qu'une aile ; il n'y prendra peut-être pas garde. (*Il mange la cuisse.*) Ma foi, elle est bonne. Je m'en vais boire un coup. Donne-moi un verre. (*Il se verse à boire et boit.*)

*La Brie.* Et s'il se réveille ?

*Comt.* Eh-bien, il me chassera, et je m'en irai.

*La Brie.* Ah, tu le prends sur ce ton là ! Oh, j'en ferai bien autant que toi, Allons, allons, donne-moi l'autre cuisse.

*Comt.* Je le veux bien. Nous serons deux contre lui ; il ne saura lequel renvoyer. (*Il lui donne l'autre cuisse.*)

*La Brie.* Donne-moi du pain.

*Comt.* Tiens, en voilà.

*La Brie.* Ma foi, tu as raison ; ce poulet est excellent. Mais je veux boire aussi.

*Comt.* Eh-bien, bois. Je songe une chose ; comme il ne doit manger qu'une aile, il ne m'en coutera pas davantage de manger l'autre ; je m'en vais en mettre une sur son assiette. (*Il mange.*)

*La Brie.* C'est bien dit ; donne-moi le corps.

*Comt.* Ah, le corps ; c'est trop, je m'en vais te donner le croupion. (*Ils mangent tous les deux.*)

*La Brie.* Cela ne vaut pas l'aile.

*Comt.* Mange, mange toujours.

*La Brie.* Buons aussi.

*Comt.* Allons, à ta santé.

*La Brie.* A la tienne. (*Ils boivent.*)

*Comt.* Ce vin là est bon. Quoi, tu manges le haut du corps ?

*La Brie.* Ma foi, oui.

*Comt.* Oh, je m'en vais manger son aile.

*La Brie.* Attends donc.

*Comt.* Je suis ton serviteur, je veux en avoir autant que toi.

*La Brie.* Tu es bien gourmand.

*Comt.* Tu ne l'es pas toi ? ah ça buons.

*La Brie.* Prends ton verre. (*Ils boivent.*)

*Comt.* Et que ferons-nous quand il s'éveillera.

*La Brie.* Je n'en sais rien. Buons pour nous aviser.

*Comt.* Il ne reste plus rien dans la bouteille.

*La Brie.* Non, et que dira Dame Jeanne quand elle verra la bouteille vide ?

*Comt.* Et les restes du poulet ?

*La Brie.* Ma foi, elle dira ce qu'elle voudra. Attends, le voilà qui remue.

*Comt.* Comment ferons-nous ? que dirons-nous ?

*La Brie.* Tiens, mets tous les os sur son assiette, et dis comme moi.

*Comt.* Oui, oui, ne t'embarrasse pas.

*La Brie.* Paix donc.

*D'Orv. (se frottant les yeux.)* Eh-bien, qu'est-ce que vous faites-là vous autres ?

*La Brie.* Monsieur, nous attendons. (*A Comtois.*) Rince son verre, et mets de l'eau dedans.

*D'Orv.* Eh-bien ; ces coquins-là ne veulent donc pas me donner mon poulet ?

*La Brie.* Votre poulet, Monsieur ?

*D'Orv.* Oui ; comment, depuis deux heures que j'attends,

*La Brie.* Que vous attendez, Monsieur ! vous badinez ; il est bien loin.

*D'Orv.* Comment bien loin ? qu'est-ce que cela veut dire ?

*La Brie.* Tenez, Monsieur, regardez devant vous.

*D'Orv.* Quoi ?

*La Brie.* Vous ne vous souvenez pas que vous l'avez mangé ?

*D'Orv.* Moi !

*La Brie.* Oui, Monsieur.

*Comt.* Monsieur a dormi depuis.

*D'Orv.* Je n'en reviens pas ! je l'ai mangé ?

*La Brie.* Oui, Monsieur, et vous n'avez rien laissé ; voyez.

*D'Orv.* Je l'ai mangé ! c'est incompréhensible ! et je meurs de faim.

*Comt.* Cela n'est pas étonnant ! puisque vous avez dormi dessus.

*D'Orv.* Mais je voudrais boire un coup du moins.

*La Brie.* Vous avez tout bu. Nous ne vous avons jamais vu une soif et un appétit pareils.

*D'Orv.* Je le crois bien ! car je l'ai encore.

*Comt.* C'est sûrement la médecine qui fait cela. Monsieur veut-il son verre d'eau ?

*D'Orv.* Un verre d'eau.

*Comt.* Oui, pour vous rincer la bouche ; parceque nous irons dîner, nous, après cela.

*D'Orv.* Je n'y comprends rien. (*Il se rince la bouche.*)

*La Brie.* (*À Comtois, bas.*) Tu vois bien que Dame Jeanne n'aura rien à dire non plus.

---

#### SCENE IV.

M. D'ORVILLE, M. FREMONT, LA BRIE, COMTOIS.

*La Brie.* (*Annonçant.*) Monsieur Frémont.

*Frém.* Eh-bien, la médecine, depuis ce matin ?

*D'Orv.* Ah Monsieur, elle m'a donné un appétit dévorant.

*Frém.* Tant mieux, cela prouve qu'elle a balayé le reste des humeurs.

*Comt.* C'est-ce que nous avons dit à Monsieur.

*D'Orv.* Mais, Monsieur, je meurs de faim.

*Frém.* N'avez-vous pas mangé votre aile de poulet, comme je vous l'avais ordonné ?

*La Brie.* Bon, Monsieur a bien plus fait ; il a mangé le poulet tout entier !

*Frém. (en colère.)* Le poulet entier ?

*Comt.* Et bu sa bouteille de vin.

*Frém. (en colère.)* Sa bouteille de vin et un poulet !

*D'Orv.* Eh, Monsieur, je mourrais de faim.

*Frém. (en colère.)* Vous mouriez de faim ! Vous n'êtes pas plus raisonnable que cela ?

*D'Orv.* Eh, Monsieur ; c'est comme si je n'avais rien mangé ; je me sens toujours le même besoin.

*Frém. (en colère.)* Le même besoin ! n'êtes-vous pas honteux !

*D'Orv.* Mais, Monsieur, considérez—

*Frém. (en colère.)* Je vous ordonne une aile de poulet, et—allez allez, monsieur ; avec une intempérance comme celle-là vous ne méritez pas qu'on s'attache à vous, et qu'on en prenne soin.

*D'Orv.* Mais, je vous prie—

*Frém.* Non, Monsieur, il faut vous mettre à la diète pendant huit jours.

*D'Orv.* Ah Monsieur Frémont !

*Frém.* A l'eau de poulet.

*D'Orv.* A l'eau de poulet ?

*Frém.* Oui, si vous ne voulez pas avoir une maladie épouvantable, une inflammation !—ou bien, je ne vous verrai plus, je ferai mieux.

*D'Orv.* Quoi, Monsieur Frémont, vous pourriez m'abandonner ?

*Frém.* Oui, Monsieur, si vous ne faites tout ce que je vous dirai.

*D'Orv.* Mais, Monsieur, rien que de l'eau poulet ?—

*Frém.* Ah, vous ne voulez pas ? adieu, Monsieur.

*D'Orv.* Mais non, Monsieur ; j'en prendrai. Allez-vous-en tous deux dire qu'on en fasse tout-à-l'heure.

*La Brie.* Oui, Monsieur.

*Frém.* Non pas pour aujourd'hui ; de l'eau de chien-dent seulement.

*D'Orv.* De l'eau de chien-dent ?

*Frém.* Oui, Monsieur.

*D'Orv.* Et vous reviendrez ?

*Frém.* A cette condition-la,

*D'Orv.* Si vous me le promettez, je ferais tout ce que vous voudrez. Je vais vous suivre jusqu'à ce que vous m'ayez donné votre parole.

*Frém.* Nous verrons comment vous vous conduirez. (*Ils sortent.*)

# VOCABULARY TO "LE POULET."

*Le poulet*, the chicken.

*Le malade*, the sick man.

*Le médecin*, the doctor.

*Le laquais*, the foot-man.

*La scène*, the scene.

*Parbleu*, zounds.

*Fatigué*, tired.

*Je meurs de faim*, I am dying of hunger.

*Vous allez avoir*, you are going to have.

*Tout-à-l'heure*, immediately.

*Pourquoi*, why.

*N'y est-il pas allé*, has he not gone for it.

*Il fallait bien être auprès de vous* it was necessary to be with you

*Habiller*, to dress.

*Mettre le couvert*, lay the cloth.

*Finir*, to end—finish.

*Ils ne finiront pas*, they will never get through.

*Allons*, (excl.) well then.

*Va t-en*, go.

*Tomber d'inanition*, to sink from want of food.

*Est-ce qu'il ne peut*, ? cannot he ?

*Le fauteuil*, the arm chair.

*Tout seul*, all alone.

*Il s'assied*, he sits down.

*Finissez donc*, make haste.

*Je vais mettre*, I am going to put.

*La table*, the table.

*Devant*, before.

*Approcher*, to draw near, (trans)

*Je m'en vais*, I am going,

*Chercher*, to look for.

*Le pain*, the bread

*Je crois*, I believe.

*Qu'il me feront*, that they will make me.

*Impatience*, impatience.

*Déployez*, untold.

*Toujours*, always, (used here for meanwhile.)

*Serviette*, (fem.) napkin.

*Pour ne pas*, not to.

*Perdre*, to lose.

*De temps*, time.

*Je n'en puis plus*, I am exhausted.

*S'endormir*, to fall asleep.

*De fatigue*, (fem.) from fatigue.

*De faiblesse*, (fem.) from weakness.

*Ronfler*, to snore.

*Porter*, to carry.

*Apporter*, to bring.

*Il y en a là*, there is some there.

*Quoi ! il dort déjà*, what ! he is already asleep.

*Je ne fais pourtant que de le quitter*, I had but just left him.

*Refroidir*, to grow cold.

*Réveiller*, to wake up.

*Je ne m'y joue pas*, I don't risk it

*Crier comme un aigle*, to scream (scold) like an eagle.

*Comment ferons-nous*, how shall we do.

*Je n'en sais rien*, I know nothing about it.

*Diner*, to dine.

*Fera*, will make.

*Ma foi*, faith.

*A je ne sais quelle heure*, at heaven knows what o'clock.

*Et moi aussi*, and I too.

*L'éveiller*, to wake him up.

*Tu n'en viendras jamais à bout*, you will never succeed.

*Criant*, crying out.

*Vois comme*, see how.

*Remuer*, to stir.

*Il n'en ronfle que plus fort*, he only snores the louder.

*Quel diable d'homme*, what a devil of a man.

*Coupe*, cut (imperative.)

*En cas que*, in case.

*Toujours autant de fait*, it will be so much done.

*Plus froid*, colder.

*Eh bien*, well then.

*Moi*, myself. (emphatic.)

*Une cuisse*, a thigh.

*Tiens, vois comme*, hold, see how.

*Cela sent bon*, that smells good, (how good that smells.)

*Sentir*, to feel—smell.

*Ne pas avoir besoin*, to have no need.

*Encore plus*, still more.

*Avoir envie*, to have a wish, desire.

*Ne manger qu'une aile*, to eat only a wing.

*Ordonner*, to order.

*Il n'y prendra pas garde*, he will not pay attention to it.

*Peut-être*, perhaps.

*Boire un coup*, to drink a glass.

*Donner un verre*, to give a glass.

*Verser à boire*, to pour out to drink.

*Se réveiller*, to wake up.

*Chasser*, to turn away.

*S'en aller*, (lui irai,) to go away

*Tu le prends sur ce ton-là*, that's the way you take it.

*J'en ferai bien autant*, I will do the same.

*Je le veux bien*, I am willing.

*Allons, allons*, come, come.

*Contre*, against.

*Lequel renvoyez*, which to send away.

*Donc*, then.

*Avoir raison*, to be right.

*Excellent*, excellent.

*Je songe une chose*, a thought strikes me.

*Ne pas devoir manger*, ought not to eat.

*Ne pas coûter davantage*, not to cost any more.

*Mettre*, to put.

*L'assiette*, the plate.

*C'est bien dit*, well said.

*Le corps*, the carcass—body.

*Le croupion*, the rump.

*Ne pas valoir*, not to be so good.

*Mange, mange toujours*, eat, eat

*Buvons*, let's drink.

*A ta santé*, your health.

*A la tienne*, yours.

*Le vin*, the wine.

*Manger*, to eat.

*Le haut*, the upper part.

*Attends donc*, wait then.

*Je suis ton serviteur*, I am your servant.

*Gourmand*, glutton.

*Tu ne l'est pas toi?* and you are not?

*Ah ça*, come.



*S'aviser*, to take counsel.  
*La bouteille*, the bottle.  
*Il ne reste plus rien*, there is no longer anything.  
*Dira*, will say.  
*Vide*, empty.  
*Les restes*, the remainder.  
*Le voiid qui remue*, see, he stirs.  
*Comment ferons-nous*, how shall we manage it?  
*Que dirons-nous ?* what shall we say?  
*Tiens, mets les os*, hold, put the bones.  
*Eh bien, qu'est-ce que vous faites là vous autres*, well, what are you doing there.  
*S'embarrasser*, to be embarrassed.  
*Paix donc*, silence.  
*Se frottant les yeux*, rubbing his eyes.  
*Rince son verre*, rinse his glass.  
*Ces coquins-là*, those rogues.  
*Deux heures*, two hours.  
*Badiner*, to jest.  
*Etre bien loin*, far from it.  
*Dormir*, to sleep.  
*Je n'en reviens pas*, I cannot recover from my astonishment.  
*Ne rien laisser*, to leave nothing.  
*Incompréhensible*, inconceivable.  
*Etonnant*, astonishing.  
*Monsieur a dormi dessus*, you have slept upon it.  
*Du moins*, at least.  
*Appetit pareil*, such an appetite  
*Surement*, surely.  
*La médecine*, the medicine.  
*L'eau*, the water.

*Se rincer la bouche*, to rinse one's mouth.  
*Après cela*, after that.  
*Comprendre*, to understand.  
*Rien à dire non plus*, nothing to say either.  
*Annoncer*, to announce.  
*Dévorant*, ravenous.  
*Balayer*, to sweep.  
*Le reste des humeurs*, the remainder of the humors.  
*Ordonné*, ordered.  
*Bien plus fait*, done a good deal more.  
*En colère*, in a passion.  
*Raisnable*, reasonable.  
*Le même besoin*, the same want.  
*Etre honteux*, to be ashamed.  
*Considérer*, to reflect.  
*Intempérance*, intemperance.  
*Ne mériter*, not to deserve.  
*S'attacher*, to attach one's self.  
*Prendre soin*, to take care.  
*Prier*, to beg.  
*A la diète*, on diet.  
*Eau de poulet*, chicken-tea.  
*Epouvantable*, frightful.  
*Inflammation*, inflammation.  
*Chien-dent*, dog's grass.  
*Seulement*, only.  
*Revenir*, to return.  
*Condition*, condition.  
*Promettre*, to promise.  
*Donner sa parole*, to give one's word.  
*Suivre*, to follow.  
*Se conduire*, to behave.  
*Sortir*, to go out.

---

# LA DIÈTE.

---

IL FAUT SAVOIR HURLER AVEC LES LOUPS.

---

## PERSONNAGES.

M. DESPREUILS

MME. DENERET, *veuve, nièce de M. Despreuils.*

LE CHEVALIER de St. JULES.

MME. BABAS, *gouvernante de M. Despreuils.*

LA ROCHE, } *laquais de M. Despreuils.*

LA FLEUR, }

LE BRUN, *laquais du Chevalier de St. Jules.*

M. SOBRIN, *Médecin.*

*La scène est chez M. Despreuils dans un salon.*

## SCÈNE I.

MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER.

*Le Chev.* Eh-bien, Madame, qu'est-ce qu'il y a de nouveau ici ?

*Mme. D.* Mon oncle est toujours de même.

*Le Chev.* Le délire continue.

*Mme. D.* Oui. Mais je ne veux pas vous parler devant les domestiques.

*Le Chev.* Pourquoi ?

*Mme. D.* C'est qu'ils ne sont pas bien intentionnés pour vous. Ils disent que mon oncle n'était pas malade, et que c'est le médecin que vous lui avez donné, qui lui a causé ce délire.

*Le Chev.* Mais Monsieur Sobrin est fort sage, et j'ai fait pour le mieux.

*Mme. D.* Je le crois ; mais la diète qu'il ordonne dans toutes les maladies a révolté nos gens, et ils ont dit à mon oncle

que, s'il ne voulait pas manger, il mourrait, qu'aujourd'hui il se croit mort, oui, absolument mort.

*Le Chev.* Quoi ! la tête de M. Despreuils est affaiblie à ce point-là ?

*Mme. D.* Oui, vraiment ; et, si elle ne revient pas, et qu'il meure en effet, je ne pourrai jamais vous épouser.

*Le Chev.* Pourquoi donc ? N'êtes-vous pas veuve, par conséquent maîtresse de vos volontés ?

*Mme. D.* Il est vrai ; mais vous ne savez pas tout. J'attends de mon oncle la seule fortune que je puisse avoir.

*Le Chev.* Je le sais.

*Mme. D.* Vous n'êtes pas riche, et il m'était bien doux de pouvoir vous faire partager des biens que je ne saurais désirer sans vous.

*Le Chev.* Votre cœur me suffit.

*Mme. D.* Je le crois ; mais, en vous épousant sans la succession de mon oncle, je vous ruinerais en vous empêchant de faire un bon mariage ; et il a fait un testament par lequel il me déshérite si je vous épouse.

*Le Chev.* O ciel ! que m'apprenez-vous ?

*Mme. D.* S'il mourrait . . .

*Le Chev.* Ne pourrait-on pas faire casser le testament, comme ayant été fait dans le délire ?

*Mme. D.* Ce serait un procès dont le succès serait très douteux ; et, comme les domestiques sont bien traités dans ce testament, le délire serait très difficile à prouver.

*Le Chev.* Comment donc faire ?

*Mme. D.* Il faut attendre M. Sobrin, que j'ai envoyé chercher par Le Brun, qui s'est trouvé ici fort à propos.

*Le Chev.* Mais la gouvernante . . .

*Mme. D.* Madame Babas ?

*Le Chev.* Oui ; elle empêchera qu'on ne suive ses ordonnances.

*Mme. D.* Il est vrai qu'elle est un peu contre lui depuis le délire de mon oncle : mais je vais lui faire entendre raison.

*Le Chev.* La chose sera difficile ? car elle est bien entêtée. La voici.

## SCÈNE II.

MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER, MME. BABAS.

Mme. D. Eh-bien, Madame Babas, mon oncle se croit-il tous les jours mort ?

Mme. B. Ah ! Madame, plus que jamais ; il nous fait perdre l'esprit, il ne veut plus ouvrir les yeux, et il ne parle que de son enterrement, et puis il dit qu'on verra dans son testament qu'il ne veut ni cloche ni chant. Quelle pitié ! ensuite il demande si on l'a lu.

Le Chev. Est-ce que les notaires n'ont pas vu qu'il était dans le délire.

Mme. D. Mais c'est qu'il n'y était pas, Madame, et qu'il avait toute sa raison comme moi. Il n'y a qu'un point qui le tourmentait, c'était de savoir que vous vous portiez bien, vous, Monsieur le Chevalier, et Monsieur Sobrin aussi. Pour Monsieur Sobrin, il a bien raison de le détester ; car c'est cette diète, qu'il lui a ordonnée, qui l'a mis dans cet état-là.

Le Chev. Eh-bien, si vous le croyez, faites le manger.

Mme. B. Est-ce qu'il y a moyen à présent ? Il dit que les morts ne mangent point. J'ai beau lui dire : " Mais, mon cher Maître écoutez donc une chose, si vous ne mangez pas, nous mourrons tous de chagrin. " " Eh-bien, " dit-il, " tant mieux ; nous nous reverrons bientôt ; " car il nous aime bien, comme vous voyez ; c'est le meilleur cœur du monde ! Pour moi, je crois que je deviendrai folle. Savez-vous que cela me fait tant peur, cette vilaine diète, que, depuis que mon maître est comme cela je fais mes quatre repas, et je mange la nuit, quand je m'éveille ; il faut vivre avant de mourir.

Mme. D. Mais Monsieur Sobrin ne vient pas.

Mme. B. Qu'en voulez-vous faire, Madame ? Voilà un beau médecin de neige ; c'est dommage qu'il n'y ait pas de dégel pour lui. Mais je m'amuse, moi, là, tandis que j'ai affaire. Voyons un peu... oui, il sera bien sur ce canapé.

Le Chev. Qui donc, Madame Babas ?

Mme. B. Monsieur Despreuils veut être transporté ici.

Mme. D. Pourquoi faire ?

Mme. B. Ah dame, pour .... Eh-bien, voilà que je ne m'en souviens pas à présent. Ah ! si j'allais devenir folle

aussi, moi ! Je m'en vais manger un morceau et boire un coup promptement.

---

### SCÈNE III.

MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER, LA ROCHE *avec des oreillers.*

*La Roche.* Je vais mettre les oreillers sur le canapé.

*Mme. D.* Est-ce que mon oncle va venir ?

*La Roche.* Oui, Madame ; c'est-à-dire, nous allons l'apporter car il dit que les morts ne marchent pas.

*Mme. D.* Chevalier, allez-vous en ; il serait peut-être fâché de vous voir.

*La Roche.* Il ne le verra pas, Madame. Il dit que, lorsqu'on est mort, on doit avoir les yeux fermés, et il tient parole. Je m'en vais le chercher. (*il sort.*)

*Mme. D.* En vérité cette situation est réellement affligeante.

*Le Chev.* Il faut espérer qu'elle ne durera pas. Nous verrons ce que dira le docteur.

*Mme. D.* Voici, je crois, mon oncle.

---

### SCÈNE IV.

M. DESPREUILS *en robe de chambre*, MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER, MME. BABAS *mangeant*, LA ROCHE *et* LA FLEUR *portant* M. Despreuils.

*La Roche.* Tiens par ici. Avance encore ; posons-le là.

*Mme. B.* Un peu plus avant ; fort bien.

*Desp.* Eh ! tu me fais mal au coup, toi, La Roche.

*La Roche.* Oh que non, Monsieur.

*Desp.* Eh parbleu, je le sens bien apparemment.

*La Roche.* Vous vous trompez, Monsieur.

*Desp.* Comment, je me trompe ?

*La Roche.* Assurément ; est-ce que les morts sont sensibles ?

*Desp.* Ah ! tu as raison ; je n'y pensais pas.

*Mme. B.* La Roche, allez-vous-en boire un coup avec La

Fleur, et n'oubliez pas de manger au moins, car vous voyez où mène la diète.

*La Roche.* Oh ! laissez-nous faire ne soyez pas en peine de nous.

---

## SCÈNE V.

MME. DENERET, M. DESPREUILS, LE CHEVALIER, MME. BABAS.

*Mme. D.* Eh-bien, mon oncle, comment vous trouvez-vous ?

*Desp.* Mais assez bien. Je ne croyais pas qu'on mourût comme cela, sans sentir ni mal ni douleur.

*Mme. D.* Mais vous n'êtes pas mort.....

*Desp.* Je ne suis pas mort ? qui vous a dit cela ?

*Mme. D.* Non, assurément, vous ne l'êtes point ? rappelez votre raison...

*Desp.* Comment ma raison ? est-ce que les morts sont des fous ? croyez-vous qu'ils aient envie de rien ? Laissez-moi tranquille ; voilà l'état où je dois être je le sais mieux que vous.

*Mme. B.* Mais, mon oncle, croyez-nous donc.

*Desp.* Ah ça, voulez-vous me faire mettre en colère afin que les morts se moquent de moi ; car je serai, je crois, le seul mort en colère.

*Mme. B.* Moi, je ne lui veux rien dire ; s'il voulait manger, cela serait différent.

*Desp.* Mais je vous dis que dans notre monde on ne mange pas.

*Mme. B.* Eh-bien, soyez du nôtre ; il vaut mieux être un bon vivant qu'un triste mort.

*Mme. D.* Ah ! voilà Le Brun.

---

## SCÈNE VI.

MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER, M. DESPREUILS, M. SORRIN,  
MME. BABAS, LE BRUN.

*Le Chev.* Eh-bien, le Docteur vient-il ?

*Le Brun.* Le voici.

*Mme. D.* Monsieur le Docteur, que dites-vous de l'état de mon oncle ?

*Sobr.* Tout-à-l'heure, Madame, tout-à-l'heure. (*Il tâte le pouls de M. Despreuils.*)

*Mme. B.* Monsieur, depuis le matin il se croit mort.

*Sobr.* Bon.

*Mme. B.* Songez donc qu'il n'a pas mangé depuis huit jours.

*Sobr.* Bon.

*Mme. B.* Toute la nuit a il a été très-agité.

*Sobr.* Bon.

*Mme. B.* Et, quelque chose que nous lui ayons dit, il n'a pas voulu ouvrir les yeux.

*Sobr.* Bon.

*Mme. B.* Comment, bon, bon, bon ! mais, s'il continue, nous ne saurons qu'en faire.

*Sobr.* Fort bien ; je sais à présent la cause du mal, et je le guérirai.

*Mme. B.* Vous ne le guérirez pas, si vous ne trouvez le moyen de le résoudre à manger.

*Sobr.* Au contraire. Ecoutez-moi.

*Mme. B.* Mais, Monsieur, quand il n'y a plus d'huile dans une lampe, il faut bien qu'elle s'éteigne ; on ne vit pas de l'air du temps, et votre diète.

*Mme. D.* Ecoutez M. le Docteur, Madame Babas.

*Mme. B.* Qu'il parle tant qu'il voudra ; mais ce n'est pas avec des paroles qu'on guérit un malade. J'ai parlé à mon mari jusqu'au dernier moment, et cela ne l'a pas empêché de mourir, le pauvre défunt !

*Mme. D.* Finissez donc.

*Mme. B.* Allons, je me tais ; mais . . .

*Sobr.* (*A. Madame Deneret.*) Madame, le mal de votre oncle est dans le sang ; c'est-à-dire, la fermentation a causé une fièvre qui tourne à la malignité, et, sans perdre un instant, il faut le saigner trois fois d'heure en heure.

*Mme. B.* Ce n'est pas mon avis à moi, Madame ; c'est Monsieur votre oncle, mais c'est mon maître.

*Desp.* Qu'est ce que dit le Docteur, Madame Babas ?

*Mme. B.* Il dit qu'il veut vous faire saigner trois fois ; n'y consentez pas, mon cher maître.

*Desp.* Je ne crois pas qu'il s'en avise.

*Sobr.* Mais, Monsieur Despreuils.

*Desp.* Non, Monsieur ; vous m'avez tué, contentez-vous de cela. On peut bien ouvrir un mort ; mais on ne le saigne pas ; et je vous empêcherai bien de me poursuivre au-delà du tombeau.

*Mme. B.* Et moi aussi je vous assure.

*Mme. D.* Madame Babas, je vous prie de ne pas vous opposer aux secours qu'il est à propos de donner à mon oncle.

*Mme. B.* Mais, Madame.

*Mme. D.* Taisez-vous.

*Mme. B.* Si je ne parle pas, je n'en penserai pas moins.

*Le Chev. (bas.)* Docteur, comment ferez-vous ? Ils ne le laisseront jamais saigner.

*Sobr.* Je sens bien que Madame Babas s'y opposera, et que le malade sera fort difficile à saigner de force ; ainsi il faut prendre un autre parti.

*Le Chev.* Voyons.

*Sobr.* Avez-vous quelqu'un sur qui vous puissiez compter ici ?

*Mme. D.* Oui, il y a Le Brun, qui est au Chevalier.

*Sobr.* Eh-bien, je vais vous envoyer un températif, qu'il lui fera prendre, sans que Madame Babas le sache, et cela arrêtera le progrès de la fièvre ; vous n'en pouvez être sûre.

*Mme. D.* Allons, envoyez-le promptement.

*Sobr.* Je vous l'apporterai moi-même, et, quelque temps après, je viendrai voir l'effet du remède.

*Mme. D.* Allez, ne tardez pas.

*Le Chev. (A Madame Deneret.)* Je vais conduire le Docteur.

*Mme. D.* J'y vais aussi ; je veux savoir ce qu'il pense réellement de l'état de mon oncle.

---

## SCÈNE VII.

M. DESPREUILS, MME. BABAS, LE BRUN.

*Mme. B.* Pour des gens d'esprit comme il donnent tête baissée dans tout ce que dit cet homme-là ! Ah ! si notre Monsieur Tibia n'était pas à la campagne, comme il aurait déjà guéri notre maître ?



*Le Brun.* Qu'est-ce que c'est que Monsieur Tibia ?

*Mme. B.* Ah ! c'est un petit chirurgien qui demeure ici au coin de la rue à droite.

*Le Brun.* Ah ça, voulez-vous que je guérisse Monsieur Despreuils moi ?

*Mme. B.* Assurément, je le veux. Tenez, j'ai plus de confiance en vous qu'en ce Docteur avec sa grande perruque et sa canne. Quand on dit un Docteur, c'est pour moi comme si l'on disait un ignorant.

*Le Brun.* Cela est souvent la même chose. A ça qu'est que vous me donnerez, si je réussis.

*Mme. B.* Tout ce que vous m'avez demandé.

*Le Brun.* Ne badinons pas ; vous savez que depuis longtemps j'ai envie de vous épouser.

*Mme. B.* Eh-bien, je vous épouserai cela ne me fait rien ; parce qu'on m'a prédit que je serais veuve trois tois.

*Le Brun.* Je ne crois pas aux devins. Allons, commencez par me donner des draps blancs, et envoyez-moi La Roche avec une échelle.

*Mme. B.* Vous me direz donc....

*Le Brun.* Oui, oui, après.

---

## SCENE VIII.

M. DESPREUILS, LE BRUN.

*Desp.* Eh-bien, qu'est-ce donc que l'on fait ? Est-ce qu'on ne songe pas à mon enterrement ?

*Le Brun.* Pardonnez-moi, Monsieur, on va apporter la tenture.

*Desp.* Avec toutes leurs cérémonies ces gens-là gâtent la mort ; mais j'ai dit dans mon testament que je ne voulais point.

*Le Brun.* Dame, Monsieur, je n'en sais rien ; mais, puisque le vin est tiré, il faut le boire.

*Desp.* Allons, finissez donc.

## SCÈNE IX.

M. DESPREUILS, LE BRUN, LA ROCHE, avec des draps et une échelle.

*Le Brun.* Aidez-moi donc. (*Ils tendent les draps.*)

*Desp.* Cela avance-t-il ?

*Le Brun.* Oui, Monsieur, voilà qui est fait. (*Ils s'en vont.*)

## SCÈNE X.

M. DESPREUILS.

Je ne sais pas quand ils viendront me chercher. Je suis bien fâché d'avoir défendu les cloches ; j'aurais entendu tout cela, et je saurais quand on aurait fini ; car je ne sens rien.

## SCÈNE XI.

M. DESPREUILS, LE BRUN.

*Le Brun.* (*contrefaisant plusieurs voix.*) Qu'est-ce donc là que passe ?—C'est ce pauvre M. Despreuils.

*Desp.* Ah, Ah ! je passe ! cela sera bientôt fait.

*Le Brun.* A-t-il été malade longtemps ?—Non ; mais ces gens pleurent bien.—C'est qu'ils l'aimaient beaucoup.—Voyez donc ce pauvre Le Brun comme il est affligé.—Est-ce qu'il était à lui ? Non ; mais il ne l'aimait pas moins.—S'il avait su cela, il lui aurait assurément laissé quelque chose.—Allons, voilà le convoi passé.—Adieu, Monsieur ; adieu, Madame.—Mes compliments chez vous.—Je n'y manquerai pas.

## SCÈNE XII.

M. DESPREUILS.

Je n'entends plus rien. Je voudrais bien savoir où je suis à présent. Je crois que je puis ouvrir les yeux. (*Il ouvre*

*les yeux.*) Ah, ah ! je ne vois que du blanc. Apparemment ce sont les Champs Elysées. Mais que dois-je faire ? dois-je me lever ou rester tranquille ? Pour le savoir attendons qu'il paraisse quelques âmes, qui sans doute me le diront. Ah ! que je m'ennuie ! On a bien raison de dire dans l'autre monde qu'on s'ennuie comme un mort. Mais j'entends quelqu'un. Examinons sans dire.

---

### SCÈNE XIII.

M. DESPREUILS, MME BABAS, LE BRUN, *enveloppés chacun d'un drap de la tête au pieds.*

*Desp.* Ce sont deux âmes.

*Le Brun (bas.)* Le Docteur a envoyé une petite bouteille, que j'ai là pour lui faire prendre.

*Mme. B.* Jetez-là par la fenêtre.

*Le Brun.* Non, je veux la lui faire voir, pour lui prouver que je n'en ai pas eu besoin.

*Mme. B.* Madame Deneret croit que nous ne réussirons pas.

*Le Brun.* Elle verra qu'elle s'est trompée.

*Desp.* Je n'entends pas un mot de ce qu'ils disent ; mais que vois-je ? je crois que c'est Le Brun !

*Le Brun.* Oui, Monsieur, c'est moi-même.

*Desp.* Depuis quand est-tu mort ?

*Le Brun.* Monsieur, deux heures après Madame Babas.

*Desp.* Madame Babas est morte ?

*Mme. B.* Oui, mon cher maître, du chagrin de ne plus vous voir ; j'ai dit comme cela, qu'est-ce que j'ai à faire au monde à présent ? et je suis morte tout de suite ; et Le Brun, qui m'aimait, est mort aussi.

*Desp.* En vérité, mes amis, j'en suis bien aise ; car je ne connais personne ici.

*Mme. B.* Que faisiez-vous donc là ?

*Desp.* Rien. Je m'ennuyais.

*Le Brun.* Mais il faut faire quelque chose pour s'amuser.

*Desp.* Eh quoi ?

*Mme. B.* Boire et manger.

*Desp.* Vous vous moquez de moi ; les âmes ne mangent pas.

*Le Brun.* Je le croyais comme vous ; mais nous avons déjà goûté, et nous allons souper.

*Desp.* Quel conte vous me faites ?

*Le Brun.* Vous allez voir. Madame Babas, vous avez nos deux poulets ?

*Mme. B.* Oui, les voici ; je les choisis bien gras.

*Le Brun.* Et moi, j'ai deux bouteilles de vin, du meilleur qui soit en Bourgogne.

*Desp.* Et vous allez boire et manger ?

*Le Brun.* Sûrement ; vous allez voir.

*Desp.* Je ne comprends pas cela.

*Mme. B.* Est-ce que vous n'avez pas faim ?

*Desp.* Parbleu, si fait, j'ai faim et soif, on ne peut pas davantage ; mais je ne crois pas que je doive manger.

*Mme. B.* Eh-bien, Monsieur, ce sont vos affaires ; pour nous nous allons toujours manger ; n'est-ce pas, Le Brun ?

*Le Brun.* Ah ! je vous en réponds.

*Mme. B.* Mettons-nous ici auprès du Monsieur pour lui tenir compagnie. Voilà votre poulet. Donnez-moi du pain.

*Le Brun.* En voici. (*Ils mangent.*)

*Desp.* Votre poulet sent bien bon.

*Mme. B.* Il est excellent !

*Le Brun.* J'avais bien faim.

*Mme. B.* Buons donc.

*Le Brun.* Volontiers. (*il verse à boire, et ils boivent*).

*Desp.* Savez-vous à quoi ? je pense, pendant que vous mangez tous les deux ?

*Le Brun, (la bouche pleine.)* Non, Monsieur ; à quoi ?

*Desp.* A tout ce qu'on dit dans le monde d'où nous venons, quand on parle de celui-ci.

*Le Brun.* Oui, cela est bien drôle ; on y, parle souvent de tout sans savoir ce qu'on dit.

*Desp.* Assurément, puisqu'on dit que, quand on est mort, on ne mange pas.

*Mme. B.* Ah ! mais, dame, écoutez donc ; peut-être qu'ici il n'y a que le peuple qui mange pour le récompenser de n'avoir pas fait aussi bonne chère que vous de son vivant.

*Le Brun.* Ah, pardi, pour moi je serais bien fâché de n'être pas peuple ici ; je serais privé d'un trop grand plaisir.

*Mme. B.* Ce qu'il y a de meilleur encore c'est qu'on peut manger tant qu'on veut sans craindre que cela fasse du mal ; parce qu'on ne meurt pas deux fois.

*Le Brun.* Cela n'est pas malheureux ; on n'est seulement pas malade ici ; ce n'est pas comme là-haut. En vérité je les plains bien ces pauvres vivants ! Allons, buvons.

*Mme. B.* Monsieur, à votre santé.

*Le Brun.* C'est sans cérémonie. A la vôtre.

*Desp.* Vous trouvez donc du goût à ce que vous mangez ?

*Mme. B.* Et un bon goût. Tenez, sentez cela.

*Desp.* Diantre ! cela augmente ma faim.

*Le Brun.* Il est bien malheureux d'être condamné comme cela à avoir toujours faim sans pouvoir manger.

*Desp.* Vous croyez que je suis condamné à cela ?

*Mme. B.* Ah dame, je ne sais pas. Qui est-ce qui sait cela ? Si vous voulez, quand nous aurons fait connaissance, ici nous nous informerons des tenants et des aboutissants, et nous vous dirons de quoi il retourne.

*Desp.* Oui, mais en attendant...

*Le Brun.* Vous êtes sûr de ne pas mourir de faim.

*Desp.* Oui ; mais de souffrir beaucoup.

*Le Brun.* Cela pourrait bien être ; mais il faut prendre patience, je n'y sais pas autre remède.

*Desp.* Econtez-moi ; vous êtes tous les deux mes amis.

*Mme. B.* Et nous le serons toujours à présent ; voilà de quoi vous pouvez être bien sûr.

*Desp.* Si vous me promettiez le secret, il me semble que je pourrais essayer de manger.

*Le Brun.* Oui ; mais c'est que nous avons encore faim.

*Desp.* Rien qu'une cuisse de poulet seulement.

*Mme. B.* Ah oui, pour essayer, n'est-ce pas ?

*Le Brun.* Oui ; mais c'est que l'appétit vient quelquefois en mangeant, et puis nous.....

*Desp.* Mes amis, je vous en prie.

*Mme. B.* Vous n'en direz rien.

*Desp.* Non, non.

*Le Brun.* Tenez, voilà une cuisse.

*Mme. B.* Et du pain.

*Desp.* En vous remerciant. (*il dévore.*)

*Mme. B.* Cela est-il bon ?

*Desp.* (*la bouche pleine.*) Excellent !

*Le Brun.* Il faut boire.

*Desp.* Donnez, donnez. (*il boit.*) Voilà de bon vin.

*Le Brun.* C'est qu'il n'y a pas ici de cabaretier. Le vin est naturel.

*Desp.* Donnez-moi quelque chose encore.

*Le Brun.* Tenez, voilà un aile.

*Desp.* Donnez-moi à boire. (*Il boit.*)

*Mme. B.* Cela ne va pas mal. Je commence à croire à présent que vous n'êtes pas condamné à mourir toujours de faim ; dame écoutez donc ; plus on vit, plus on apprend.

*Desp.* En vérité, mes amis, je suis bien heureux que vous soyez morts.

*Le Brun.* Buvez, Buvez ! (*Il verse à boire*)

*Desp.* *Après avoir bu.* Tout cela me fait un grand plaisir !

*Le Brun.* Vous voyez bien que les morts vous apprennent à vivre.

*Mme. B.* Si j'étais vous, pour vous amuser, car vous n'avez rien à faire, je m'amuserais à dormir, c'est toujours autant de prise.

*Desp.* Les morts dorment-il ?

*Le Brun.* Tant qu'i s veulent.

*Desp.* Je commence à le croire ; car j'en ai bien envie.

*Mme. B.* Eh-bien, asseyez. Attendez, je vais raccommoder votre bonnet de nuit et votre couvrepieds. Là, voilà qui est bien Bon soir.

*Desp.* Bon soir, bon soir.

*Le Brun.* Bon soir, Monsieur. Il ne me répond pas ; bon soir Monsieur. Ma foi, il est déjà endormi.

*Mme. B.* Le voilà sauvé.

*Le Brun.* Pour moi, je le crois. Bon soir, Monsieur. Il n'entend rien.

*Mme. B.* Allons, emportons tout cela.

*Le Brun.* Non, laissons-le là.

---

## SCÈNE XIV.

MME. DENERET, M. DESPREUILS, LE CHEVALIER, MME. BABAS  
LE BRUN.

*Mme. D.* Nous avons tout entendu. Mon oncle dort-il tout de bon ?

*Le Brun.* Je vous en réponds.

*Le Chev.* Il ne faut pas le réveiller.

*Mme. B.* Oh ! il n'y a rien à craindre ; quand il dort un

fois, on tirerait le canon de la Bastille, que cela ne lui ferait rien.

*Mme. D.* Voilà une heureuse idée que Le Brun a eue là.

*Le Brun.* Je vais détendre tout cela pour quand il se réveillera.

*Le Chev.* Dépêche-toi.

*Le Brun.* J'aurai bientôt fait. (*Il va chercher une échelle, et détend les draps.*)

*Mme. D.* Pourvu qu'il revienne dans son bon sens.

*Mme. B.* Ah ! pardi, il y sera, puisqu'il a mangé ; je vous en réponds, moi. Je voudrais avoir autant d'écus que les médecins on tué de monde avec leur diète. Pour moi je sais bien que, lorsque je serai malade, je demanderai toujours à manger ; tant qu'on mange, on ne meurt pas.

*Le Brun.* Allons, voilà qui est fait. (*Il emporte les draps et l'échelle.*)

*Mme. B.* Je ne suis pas encore sans inquiétude.

*Le Chev.* Vous verrez à son réveil.

## SCÈNE XV.

MME. DENERET, LE CHEVALIER, M. DESPREUILS, M. SOBRIN,

MME. BABAS, LE BRUN.

*Le Brun.* Voilà, Monsieur le Docteur.

*Sobr.* Eh-bien, notre malade ?

*Mme. B.* Il dort, et je le crois hors d'affaire.

*Sobr.* Cela doit être. Oh ! j'étais sûr de mon fait. Il faut le réveiller.

*Mme. B.* Non, Monsieur ; laissez, je vous prie, reposer mon pauvre maître ; vous voulez peut être encore le saigner.

*Sobr.* Non, je vous en donne ma parole d'honneur ; d'ailleurs il ne doit plus en avoir besoin.

*Le Chev.* Vous le croyez, Docteur ?

*Sobr.* Quand je vous dis que j'en suis sûr. Allons, Monsieur Despreuils !

*Desp.* Ah ! c'est vous, Docteur ?

*Sobr.* Oui, c'est moi. Donnez-moi votre bras, (*Il lui tâte le pouls*). Fort bien ; il n'y a plus d'agitation.

*Desp.* Ah ! Docteur, j'ai fait un terrible rêve.

*Mme. B.* Ah ! s'il prend cela pour un rêve !

*Mme D.* Ne dites donc rien, Madame Babas.

*Desp.* Je me suis cru mort.

*Sobr.* Eh-bien, vous ne le croyez plus ?

*Desp.* Non vraiment ; je me sens même assez de force.

*Sobr.* C'est moi qui vous ai tiré de là.

*Desp.* Vous ?

*Sobr.* Oui, avec un températif que je vous ai fait donner.

*Desp.* Je ne m'en souviens pas . . .

*Le Brun.* Je m'en souviens bien moi.

*Sobr.* Ne vous l'a-t-on pas remis pour le faire prendre à Monsieur Despreuils ?

*Le Brun.* Oui, Monsieur ; mais, comme vous ne vouliez pas croire que c'était la diète qui l'avait mis dans l'état où il était, Madame Babas et moi nous lui avons fait manger une cuisse et un aile de poulet ; il a bien dormi ; il se porte à merveille, et voilà votre températif que j'ai gardé dans ma poche.

*Sobr.* Quoi ! vous l'avez fait manger ?

*Mme. B.* Oui, Monsieur ; tenez voilà les restes du poulet et du vin.

*Sobr.* Et vous le croyez guéri ?

*Le Brun.* Assurément ; et vous en êtes convenu vous-même tout-à-l'heure.

*Sobr.* Eh-bien, je suis trompé.

*Mme. B.* C'est peut-être votre habitude.

*Mme. D.* Docteur, vous convenez donc que Monsieur Despreuils . . .

*Sobr.* Est fort mal.

*Desp.* Moi fort mal ! (*Il se lève.*) Je ne conviendrai pas de cela.

*Sobr.* Voyez à quoi vous l'exposez.

*Desp.* A te chasser, maudit ignorant.

*Sobr.* Ceci est un peu fort ; un malade n'a jamais chassé un médecin. Vous me rappelerez ; mais vous ne m'aurez pas quand vous voudrez.

*Mme. B.* Ah ! tant mieux. Je voudrais bien ne le revoir jamais ici.



## SCÈNE XVI.

MME. DENERET, M. DESPREUILS, LE CHEVALIER, MME. BABAS,  
LE BRUN.

*Le Brun.* J'espère, Monsieur, que vous serez plus content de votre nouveau médecin, et que si vous avez été fâché contre Monsieur Chevalier pour vous avoir donné l'autre...

*Desp.* Moi, j'ai été fâché contre le Chevalier ?

*Mme. D.* Oui, mon oncle ; puisque vous avez mis dans votre testament que vous me déshériteriez si j'aimais je voulais l'épouser.

*Desp.* J'ai fait mon testament ?

*Mme. B.* Oui, Monsieur.

*Desp.* Et j'y ai mis cette clause ?

*Mme. D.* Oui mon oncle.

*Desp.* Eh-bien, je vais l'annuler par un bon contrat bien en forme, où je vous donnerai tout mon bien qu'à condition que vous l'épouserez sans différer.

*Mme. D.* Ah ! mon oncle !

*Desp.* Je n'ai jamais eu d'autre intention.

*Le Chev.* Monsieur, toute la vie...

*Desp.* Ne parlons point de remerciemens. Laissez-moi aller m'habiller ; car je veux sortir, et passer chez mon notaire.

*Le Brun.* Monsieur, nous avons fait un marché, Madame Babas et moi.

*Desp.* Qu'est-ce que c'est ?

*Le Brun.* Qu'elle m'épouserait, si je vous guérissais.

*Desp.* J'entends ; c'est encore un autre contrat ; je m'en charge. Un v. eux garçon n'a rien de mieux à faire que de marier tout ce qui l'entoure.

## VOCABULARY TO " LA DIETE."

*La diète*, the diet,

*La veuve*, the widow.

*La nièce*, the niece.

*La gouvernante*, the house-keeper.

*Le laquais*, the valet.

*Le chevalier*, the chevalier.

*Le médecin*, the physician.

*Le salon*, the drawing-room.

*Il faut savoir*, we must know how.

*Hurler*, howl.

*Le loup*, the wolf

*De nouveau*, again—once more.

*L'oncle*, the uncle.

*Toujours de même*, still the same.

*Le délire*, the delirium.

*Continuer*, to continue.

*Le domestique*, the servant.  
*Intentionnés*, disposed.  
*Causer*, to cause.  
*Etre fort sage*, to be very discreet—judicious  
*Faire pour le mieux*, to do for the best.  
*Ordonner*, to order—prescribe.  
*Révolter*,—to revolt.  
*Les gens*, people (domestics,)  
*Mourir*, to die.  
*Absolument*, absolutely.  
*Aujourd'hui*, to-day.  
*Se croire mort*, to believe one's self dead.  
*Affaibli à ce point*! *Id.*, grown weak to that point.  
*Vraiment*, truly—really.  
*Epouser*, to marry.  
*Par conséquent*, consequently.  
*Maîtresse*, mistress.  
*La volonté*, will.  
*Attendre*, to wait—expect.  
*La seule fortune*, all the fortune.  
*Riche*, rich.  
*Doux*, sweet.  
*Partager*, to share.  
*Les biens*, the wealth.  
*Désirer*, to desire.  
*Cœur*, heart.  
*Suffire*, to suffice.  
*La succession*, the inheritance.  
*Ruiner*, to ruin.  
*Empêcher*, to prevent.  
*Le bon mariage*, a good match.  
*Le testament*, the will.  
*Déshériter*, to disinherit.  
*O ciel!* good heaven!  
*Apprendre*, to learn.  
*Casser*, to break.  
*Le procès*, the suit, (at law.)  
*Le succès*, the success—issue.  
*Douteux*, doubtful.  
*Traiter*, to treat.  
*Bien traités*, well provided for.

*Approuver*, to prove.  
*Se trouver ici*, to happen to be here.  
*Fort à propos*, just at the right moment.  
*Suivre*, to follow.  
*L'ordonnance*, the prescription.  
*Faire entendre raison*, to make listen to reason.  
*Etre entêtée*, to be obstinate.  
*Mort*, dead.  
*Perdre l'esprit*, to lose one's wits  
*Ouvrir les yeux*, to open one's eyes.  
*L'enterrement*, the burial—funeral.  
*Les cloches*, the bells.  
*Le chant*, the dirge.  
*Quelle pitié!* what a pity.  
*Ensuite*, then.  
*Le notaire*, the notary.  
*La raison*, the reason.  
*Un point*, a point.  
*Tourmenter*, to torment.  
*Se porter bien*, to be well.  
*Détester*, to detest.  
*Faites-le*, make him.  
*Y avoir moyen*, to be any way.  
*À présent*, now.  
*Avoir beau dire*, to be in vain to say.  
*De chagrin*, with sorrow.  
*Faire ses quatre repas*, eat one's four meals.  
*S'éveiller*, to wake up.  
*Vivre*, to live.  
*Le médecin de neige*, a man of straw (lit. a doctor of snow.)  
*Etre dommage*, to be a pity.  
*Le dégel*, thaw.  
*S'amuser tandis que*, to amuse one's self while.  
*Le canapé*, the sofa.  
*Etre transporté*, to be carried.  
*Ah dame*, well.

|                                             |                                          |
|---------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>Se souvenir</i> , to remember.           | <i>Triste mort</i> , a sad dead man.     |
| <i>Devenir folle</i> , to turn crazy.       | <i>Le docteur</i> , the doctor.          |
| <i>Un morceau</i> , a piece.                | <i>L'état de</i> , the state of.         |
| <i>Promptement</i> , promptly—              | <i>Tout-d-l'heure</i> , instantly.       |
| quickly.                                    | <i>Depuis</i> , since.                   |
| <i>L'oreiller</i> , the pillow.             | <i>Bon</i> , well.                       |
| <i>C'est-d-dire</i> , that is to say.       | <i>Songez donc</i> , think then.         |
| <i>Marcher</i> , to walk.                   | <i>Huit jours</i> , a week.              |
| <i>Allez-vous-en</i> , go away              | <i>Très agité</i> , very restless.       |
| <i>Etre fâché</i> , to be sorry.            | <i>Ne savoir qu'en faire</i> not to      |
| <i>Fermé</i> , shut.                        | know what to do with.                    |
| <i>Tenir parole</i> , to keep ones' word.   | <i>Le guérirai</i> , I will cure him.    |
| <i>En vérité</i> , in truth.                | <i>Le résoudre d</i> , to induce him to. |
| <i>La situation</i> , the situation.        | <i>Au contraire</i> , on the contrary.   |
| <i>Affligeante</i> , distressing.           | <i>L'huile</i> , the oil.                |
| <i>Réellement</i> , really.                 | <i>Une lampe</i> , a lamp.               |
| <i>Espérer</i> , to hope.                   | <i>S'éteindre</i> , to go out.           |
| <i>Croire</i> , to believe.                 | <i>La parole</i> , the word—speech.      |
| <i>Tiens par ici</i> , hold this way.       | <i>Empêcher</i> , to prevent.            |
| <i>Avancer</i> , to bring or carry for-     | <i>Se taire</i> , to be silent.          |
| ward.                                       | <i>Le sang</i> , the blood.              |
| <i>Poser</i> , to set down.                 | <i>C'est-d-dire</i> , that is.           |
| <i>Plus avant</i> , further forward.        | <i>La fermentation</i> , the fermenta-   |
| <i>Fort bien</i> , very well.               | tion                                     |
| <i>Faire mal au cou</i> , to hurt the neck. | <i>Causer une fièvre</i> , to cause a    |
| <i>Oh que non</i> , oh ! on.                | fever.                                   |
| <i>Sentir</i> , to feel.                    | <i>Tourner à la malignité</i> , to turn  |
| <i>Apparemment</i> apparently.              | to malignant.                            |
| <i>Se tromper</i> , to deceive one's self.  | <i>Saigner</i> , to bleed.               |
| <i>Assurément</i> , surely.                 | <i>Trois fois</i> , three times.         |
| <i>Etre sensible</i> , to be sensible of.   | <i>Y consentir</i> , to consent to it.   |
| <i>Avoir raison</i> , to be right.          | <i>S'aviser</i> , to think of—take into  |
| <i>Où mène</i> , to what leads.             | one's head.                              |
| <i>Etre en peine</i> , to be troubled—      | <i>Tuer</i> , to kill.                   |
| uneasy.                                     | <i>Ouvrir un mort</i> , to open a dead   |
| <i>Pe mal</i> , the disease.                | body.                                    |
| <i>La douleur</i> , the pain.               | <i>Poursuivre</i> , to pursue.           |
| <i>Rappeler</i> , to recal.                 | <i>Au delà du tom beau</i> , beyond the  |
| <i>Les fous</i> , fools.                    | grave.                                   |
| <i>Avoir envie de rire</i> , to have a      | <i>S'opposer aux secours</i> , to oppose |
| disposition to laugh.                       | one's self to the assistance.            |
| <i>Se mettre en colère</i> , to fly it to a | <i>Etre à propos de donner</i> , to be   |
| passion.                                    | proper to give.                          |
| <i>Se moquer</i> , to make fun of.          | <i>Taisez vous</i> , hold your tongue.   |
| <i>Bon vivant</i> , good liver (jolly       | <i>De force</i> , by force.              |
| companion.)                                 |                                          |

|                                                        |                                                           |
|--------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Prendre un autre part</i> , to take another course. | <i>Apparemment</i> , apparently.                          |
| <i>Pouvoir compter sur</i> , to be able to count upon. | <i>Champs Elysées</i> , Elysian fields.                   |
| <i>Un températif</i> , a quieting dose.                | <i>S'ennuyer</i> , to be wearied.                         |
| <i>Arrêter</i> , to check.                             | <i>Examiner</i> , to examine.                             |
| <i>Promptement</i> , promptly.                         | <i>Une âme a soul</i> —spirit.                            |
| <i>L'effet du remède</i> the effect of the medicine.   | <i>Envelopper</i> , to wrap up.                           |
| <i>Tarder</i> , to wait—to be long.                    | <i>De la tête aux pieds</i> , from head to foot.          |
| <i>Conduire</i> , to lead.                             | <i>Jeter par la fenêtre</i> , to throw out of the window. |
| <i>Réellement</i> , really.                            | <i>Prouver</i> , to prove.                                |
| <i>Les gens d'esprit</i> , intelligent people.         | <i>Réussir</i> to succeed.                                |
| <i>Donner tête battée</i> , to fall blindly in with.   | <i>Se tromper</i> to be mistaken—deceive one's self.      |
| <i>Un petit chirurgien</i> , a little surgeon.         | <i>Le chagrin</i> , grief.                                |
| <i>Assurément</i> , certainly.                         | <i>Tout de suite</i> , immediately.                       |
| <i>La confiance</i> , the confidence.                  | <i>En vérité</i> , in fact.                               |
| <i>Un ignorant</i> , an ignoramus.                     | <i>Déjà goûté</i> , already lunched.                      |
| <i>Ah ça ! ah</i> —so—come.                            | <i>Souper</i> , to sup.                                   |
| <i>Donner</i> , to give.                               | <i>Un conte</i> , a story.                                |
| <i>Réussir</i> , to succeed.                           | <i>Bien gras</i> , very fat.                              |
| <i>Badiner</i> , to jest.                              | <i>Surement</i> , surely.                                 |
| <i>Prédire</i> , to foretell.                          | <i>Comprendre</i> , to understand.                        |
| <i>Le devin</i> , soothsayer.                          | <i>Vos affaires</i> , your business.                      |
| <i>Le drap blanc</i> , sheet.                          | <i>Tenir compagnie</i> , to keep company.                 |
| <i>L'échelle</i> , ladder.                             | <i>Sentir bon</i> , to smell good.                        |
| <i>Songer à</i> , to think—take care of.               | <i>Volontiers</i> , willingly.                            |
| <i>Tenture</i> , the hanging.                          | <i>La bouche pleine</i> , the mouth full.                 |
| <i>Aider</i> , to help.                                | <i>Le monde</i> , the world.                              |
| <i>Tendre</i> , to hang.                               | <i>Bien drôle</i> , very funny.                           |
| <i>Avancer</i> , to advance—make progress.             | <i>Le peuple</i> , the people.                            |
| <i>Défendre les colches</i> , to forbid the bells.     | <i>Récompenser</i> , to reward.                           |
| <i>Contrefaire</i> , to disguise.                      | <i>Bonne chère</i> , good cheer,                          |
| <i>La voix</i> , the voice.                            | <i>Son vivant</i> , during their lives.                   |
| <i>Pleurent bien</i> , weep bitterly.                  | <i>Pardi</i> , zounds—faith.                              |
| <i>Etre affligé</i> , to be afflicted.                 | <i>Etre bien fâché</i> , to be very sorry.                |
| <i>Assurément</i> , surely.                            | <i>Faire mal</i> , to hurt.                               |
| <i>Laissé</i> , left.                                  | <i>Malheureux</i> , unfortunate—unhappy.                  |
| <i>Le convoi</i> , the procession.                     | <i>Là-haut</i> , up-above.                                |
| <i>Le compliment</i> , compliment.                     | <i>Cérémonie</i> , ceremony.                              |
| <i>Ouvrir</i> , to open.                               | <i>Le goût</i> , taste—flavour.                           |
|                                                        | <i>Diantre ! zounds !</i>                                 |
|                                                        | <i>Condamné à</i> , condemned to.                         |
|                                                        | <i>Connaissances</i> , acquaintance.                      |

|                                                                                          |                                                                    |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>S'informer</i> , to inquire of.                                                       | <i>L'écu</i> , a halt-crown.                                       |
| <i>Des tenants et des aboutissants</i> , comers and goers.                               | <i>Tué du monde</i> , killed people.                               |
| <i>De quoi il retourne</i> , what is going on.                                           | <i>L'inquiétude</i> , anxiety.                                     |
| <i>Souffrir</i> , to suffer.                                                             | <i>Hors d'affaires</i> , out of danger.                            |
| <i>Prendre patience</i> , to take patience.                                              | <i>Etre sur de son fait</i> , to be sure of what one does or says. |
| <i>Promettre le secret</i> , to promise to keep it secret.                               | <i>Purolé d'honneur</i> , on one's honour—word of honour.          |
| <i>Essayer</i> , to try.                                                                 | <i>Duilleurs</i> , besides.                                        |
| <i>L'appétit</i> , appetite.                                                             | <i>Tâter le pouls</i> , to feel the pulse.                         |
| <i>Remercier</i> , to thank.                                                             | <i>L'agitation</i> , agitation.                                    |
| <i>Dévorer</i> , to devour.                                                              | <i>Terrible rêve</i> , a horrible dream.                           |
| <i>Le cabaretier</i> , the tavern-keeper.                                                | <i>La force</i> , strength.                                        |
| <i>Vin naturel</i> , pure wine.                                                          | <i>A tiré de là</i> , have extricated (saved) him from that.       |
| <i>Mourir</i> , to die.                                                                  | <i>Remettre (remis)</i> to give—con sign to.                       |
| <i>Verser à boire</i> , to pour out to drink.                                            | <i>À merveille</i> , perfectly.                                    |
| <i>Faire grand plaisir</i> , to do a great favour, or give great pleasure.               | <i>Garder dans la poche</i> , to keep in one's pocket.             |
| <i>Apprendre à vivre</i> , to teach how to live.                                         | <i>Se tromper</i> , to mistake—be mistaken.                        |
| <i>S'amuser à dormir</i> , to amuse one's self by sleeping.                              | <i>L'habitude</i> , habit.                                         |
| <i>Commencer à croire</i> , to begin to believe.                                         | <i>Convenir</i> , to agree to.                                     |
| <i>Avoir envie</i> , to wish.                                                            | <i>Se lever</i> , to get up.                                       |
| <i>Raccommoder</i> , to arrange.                                                         | <i>Exposer</i> , to expose.                                        |
| <i>Le bonnet de nuit</i> , nightcap.                                                     | <i>Chasser</i> , to drive—turn away.                               |
| <i>Le couvrepieds</i> , foot coverlid.                                                   | <i>Un maudit ignorant</i> , a cursed ignoramus.                    |
| <i>Endormir</i> , to fall asleep.                                                        | <i>Un peut fort</i> , somewhat strong.                             |
| <i>Le voilà sauvé</i> he is saved.                                                       | <i>Rappeler</i> , to recal.                                        |
| <i>Emporter</i> , to carry away.                                                         | <i>Déshériter</i> , to disinherit.                                 |
| <i>Tout de bon</i> , really.                                                             | <i>Une clause</i> , a clause.                                      |
| <i>Je vous en réponds</i> , I will answer for it.                                        | <i>Annuler</i> , to annul.                                         |
| <i>Le réveiller</i> , to wake him up.                                                    | <i>Un contrat bien en forme</i> , a formal contract.               |
| <i>Rien à craindre</i> , nothing to fear.                                                | <i>Différer</i> , to put off.                                      |
| <i>Tirer le canon</i> , to fire the canon.                                               | <i>Remerciement</i> , thanks.                                      |
| <i>De la Bastille</i> , of the Bastille.                                                 | <i>Le notaire</i> , the notary.                                    |
| <i>Heureuse idée</i> , a lucky thought.                                                  | <i>Le marché</i> , the bargain.                                    |
| <i>Détendre</i> to unhang.                                                               | <i>Guérir</i> , to cure.                                           |
| <i>Se dépêcher</i> , to make haste.                                                      | <i>Entendre</i> , to understand.                                   |
| <i>Avoir bientôt fait</i> , to be soon done.                                             | <i>S'en charger</i> , to take upon one's self.                     |
| <i>Pourvu qu'il revienne dans son bon sens</i> , provided he wakes up in his right mind. | <i>Le vieux garçon</i> , the old bachelor.                         |
|                                                                                          | <i>Marier</i> , to marry.                                          |
|                                                                                          | <i>Rien de mieux</i> , nothing better.                             |

---

L'ENRAGÉ.

---

---

PLUS DE PEUR QUE DE MAL.

---

---

PERSONNAGES.LE COMTE D'ERMONT, *Lieutenant-Général.*LE CHEVALIER DE GIRSAC, *Lieutenant d'Infanterie.*MME. THOMAS, *maîtresse d'Auberge.*M. HACHIS, *cuisinier.**La Scène représente une chambre d'auberge de campagne.*

## SCÈNE I.

MME. THOM. (*entrant la première, et fermant la fenêtre*). Monsieur le Comte, voilà votre chambre.

LE COMTE. Elle n'est pas trop bonne ; mais une nuit est bientôt passée.

MME. THOM. Monsieur, c'est la meilleure de la maison, et personne n'a encore couché dans ce lit-là depuis que les matelas ont été rabattus.

LE COMTE. Voulez-vous bien mettre cela quelque part. (*Il lui donne son chapeau, son épée et sa canne, et il s'assied.*) Ah, ça, Madame Thomas, qu'est ce que vous me donnerez à souper ?

MME. THOM. Tout ce que vous voudrez, Monsieur le Comte.

LE COMTE. Mais encore ?

MME. THOM. Vous n'avez qu'à dire.

LE COMTE. Qu'est-ce que vous avez ?

MME. THOM. Je ne sais pas bien ; mais, si vous voulez je m'en vais faire monter Monsieur l'Ecuyer.

LE COMTE. Ah, oui, je serai fort aise de causer avec Monsieur l'Ecuyer.

MME. THOM. (*criant.*) Marianne, dites à Monsieur l'Ecuyer de monter.

LE COMTE. Avez-vous bien du monde dans ce temps-ci, Madame Thomas ?

MME. THOM. Monsieur, pas beaucoup, depuis qu'on a fait passer la grande route par . . . chose . . .

LE COMTE. Je passerai toujours par ici, moi ; je suis bien aise de vous voir, Madame Thomas.

MME. THOM. Ah, Monsieur je suis bien votre servante, et vous avez bien de la bonté.

LE COMTE. Il y a longtemps que nous nous connaissons.

MME. THOM. Monsieur, m'a vû bien petite.

LE COMTE. Et vous m'avez toujours vû grand, vous. C'est bien différent.

---

## SCÈNE II.

LE COMTE, MME. THOMAS, M. HACHIS.

MME. THOM. Tenez, Monsieur l'Ecuyer, parlez à Monsieur le Comte.

LE COMTE. Ah Monsieur l'Ecuyer, qu'est-ce que vous me donnez à manger ?

HACHIS. Monsieur dans ce temps-ci nous n'avons pas de grandes provisions.

LE COMTE. Mais qu'est-ce que vous avez ?

HACHIS. Qu'est-ce que Monsieur le Comte aime ?

LE COMTE. Je ne suis pas difficile ; mais je veux bien souper, Voyons.

HACHIS. Si Monsieur le Comte avait aimé le veau.

LE COMTE. Oui, pourquoi pas ?

HACHIS. Ce matin nous avons une noix de veau excellente.

LE COMTE. Eh-bien, donnez-le moi.

HACHIS. Oui, mais y a deux Messieurs qui l'ont mangée. Cela ne fait rien, on donnera autre chose à Monsieur le Comte.

LE COMTE. Mais quoi ?

HACHIS. Madame Thomas, si nous avons cette outarde de l'autre jour.

LE COMTE. Est-ce qu'il y en a dans ce pays-ci ?

MME. THOM. Oui, Monsieur, quelque fois.

LE COMTE. Et vous ne pourriez pas en avoir une ?

HACHIS. Oh mon Dieu, non.

LE COMTE. Pourquoi dit-il que vous en aviez une l'autre jour ?

MME. THOM. Ce n'est pas nous ; ce sont des voyageurs qui passent par ici, et qui nous en font voir, quand ils en ont ; et, quand il dit l'autre jour, il y a plus de six mois.

HACHIS. Six mois ! il n'y en a pas trois.

MME. THOM. Je dis qu'il y en a six, puisque c'était le jour du mariage de Monsieur le Bailli.

HACHIS. Vous croyez ?

MME. THOM. J'en suis sûre.

LE COMTE. Oui, mais avec tout cela je meurs de faim, et je ne sais pas encore ce que j'aurai à souper.

MME. THOM. Il n'y a qu'à commencer par faire une tricaassée de poulets.

HACHIS. Oui, cela se peut faire, et cela n'est pas long.

LE COMTE. Eh-bien, allez donc toujours. Nous verrons après.

HACHIS. Allons, allons, (*Il s'en va et revient.*) Je songe une chose, nous n'avons pas de poulets ; nous n'avons que ceux qui sont éclos ce matin, et ils sont trop petits.

MME. THOM. Eh-bien, nous donnerons autre chose à Monsieur.

LE COMTE. Mais dépêchez-vous.

MME. THOM. Il n'y a qu'à faire une compote de pigeons.

HACHIS. Vous savez bien que, depuis qu'on a jeté un sort sur le colombier, il n'y en revient plus.

MME. THOM. C'est vrai, je n'y pensais pas.

LE COMTE. Mais donnez-moi de la viande du boucherie, et finissons.

MME. THOM. Monsieur l'Ecuyer n'est pas long, il est accoutumé à servir promptement.

LE COMTE. Donnez moi des cotelettes.

HACHIS. On a mangé les dernières à diner.

LE COMTE. N'y a-t-il pas ici un boucher ?

MME. THOM. Oui, Monsieur ; mais c'est aujourd'hui Jeudi ; il ne tuera que demain.

LE COMTE. Quoi, je ne pourrai donc rien avoir ?

HACHIS. Pardonnez-moi ; mais c'est qu'il faut savoir le goût de Monsieur.

LE COMTE. Mais j'aime tout, et vous n'avez rien.

HACHIS. Si Monsieur voulait un gigot, par exemple ?

LE COMTE. Oui, et vous n'en aurez pas ?

HACHIS. Je vous demande pardon, nous en avons un.



LE COMTE. Ah, voilà donc quelque chose ! mais il sera bien dur ?

HACHIS. Non, Monsieur, il sera fort tendre, j'en réponds.

LE COMTE. Eh-bien, mettez-le à la broche tout de suite.

HACHIS. Allons, allons, il sera bientôt cuit.

LE COMTE. Vous n'avez pas autre chose ?

HACHIS. Non, Monsieur, pour le présent ; mais, si vous repassiez dans huit jours....

LE COMTE. Eh, va te promener. Allons, ne perdez pas de temps.

HACHIS. J'y vais, j'y vais.

MME. THOM. Et moi, je m'en vais mettre le couvert en attendant.

LE COMTE. Allons, dépêchez-vous, tous les deux.

MME. THOM. Vous n'attendrez pas. *(Elle sort.)*

---

### SCÈNE III.

LE COMTE, seul, prenant du tabac.

Quelle diable d'Auberge ! *(il se promène.)* On ne m'y rattrapera plus. *(Il regarde à la fenêtre et lit l'enseigne.)* " Ici l'on fait nôtches et festins, à pied, à cheval." Ce sont de jolis festins, je crois.

---

### SCÈNE IV.

LE COMTE, MME. THOMAS.

MME. THOM. *(mettant le couvert.)* Le couvert sera bientôt mis ; c'est toujours une avance.

LE COMTE. Et le gigot, est-il à la broche ?

MME. THOM. Oui, monsieur, il y a long-temps.

LE COMTE. Pourvu qu'il ne soit pas gâté encore.

MME. THOM. Oh, non, Monsieur ; le mouton est tué d'hier.

LE COMTE. D'hier ? il sera dur comme un chien.

MME. THOM. Non, non. *(Elle s'en va et revient.)* Quel vin veut Monsieur le Comte ?

LE COMTE. Eh, celui que vous aurez.

MME. THOM. Nous avons du vin blanc et du vin rouge.

LE COMTE. Donnez-moi du blanc.

MME. THOM. C'est bien choisir, car c'est le meilleur.

LE COMTE. Oui, je crois que ce sera de joli vin.

MME. THOM. Il est excellent, car, quand Monseigneur l'Intendant passe par-ici, on en met toujours six bouteilles dans son carrosse.

LE COMTE. Pour ses gens apparemment ?

MME. THOM. Non, car c'est lui qui paie tout.

LE COMTE. Je le crois bien.

MME. THOM. Vous verrez, vous verrez. (*Elle crie.*) Mari-  
anne ? oh. (*Elle sort et prend deux bouteilles, qu'elle met sur la  
table.*) Tenez, en voilà des deux façons, vous choisirez. (*Elle  
s'en va et revient.*) Monsieur, je voulais vous dire une chose.

LE COMTE. Qu'est-ce que c'est ? pourvu qu'il ne soit rien ar-  
rivé au gigot.

MME. THOM. Oh, non, Monsieur, tout au contraire.

LE COMTE. Eh bien, dites donc.

MME. THOM. Monsieur, c'est que nous avons là-bas un jeune  
officier, et....

LE COMTE. Quoi ?

MME. THOM. Si Monsieur le Comte voulait, il aurait l'hon-  
neur de souper avec lui.

LE COMTE. Et le gigot, est-il fort ?

MME. THOM. Oh, oui, Monsieur.

LE COMTE. Sans cela il ne souperait pas, n'est-ce pas ?

MME. THOM. Mais nous serions bien embarrassés.

LE COMTE. Faites-le monter.

MME. THOM. Je m'en vais lui dire.

LE COMTE. Ecoutez, apportez un couvert.

MME. THOM. Oui, oui, Monsieur.

LE COMTE. Attendez donc ; le connaissez-vous, cet officier ?

MME. THOM. Oui, Monsieur, il passe toujours par-ici.

LE COMTE. Vous ne savez pas son nom ?

MME. THOM. Son nom ? ah, c'est Monsieur le Chevalier de  
Girsac.

LE COMTE. Girsac ?

MME. THOM. Oui, j'en suis bien sûre ; car il a passé par ici  
quand il était page, et il a écrit son nom sur la cheminée de sa  
chambre.

LE COMTE. Allons, faites-le venir.

MME. THOM. J'y vais, j'y vais. Monsieur le Chevalier, Monsieur le Chevalier, par-ici, par-ici. Entrez-là.

---

## SCÈNE V.

LE COMTE, LE CHEVALIER.

LE COMTE. Monsieur le Chevalier, entrez donc. (*Le Chevalier fait de grandes révérences.*) Je serai charmé de faire connaissance avec vous.

LE CHEV. Mon Général ; c'est bien de l'honneur pour moi.

LE COMTE. Asseyez-vous donc. (*Le Chevalier s'assied.*) Nous ferons mauvaise chère. D'où venez-vous comme cela ?

LE CHEV. Du régiment, mon Général de Dunkerque.

LE COMTE. Qu'est-ce qui en est Lieutenant-Colonel à présent ? Est-ce toujours le bonhomme La Garde ?

LE CHEV. Non, mon Général, il a eu une Lieutenance de Roi. C'est Monsieur de Gouvière.

LE COMTE. Ah, qui était dans Poitou ?

LE CHEV. Justement.

LE COMTE. Et le Major.

LE CHEV. C'est encore Monsieur de la Verdac.

LE COMTE. Un gros garçon, que j'ai vû, il y a bien longtemps, Commandant de Bataillon ?

LE CHEV. Oui, mon Général.

LE COMTE. Et qu'est devenu le petit Guiraudan ? C'était un joli officier.

LE CHEV. Il s'est marié d'abord qu'il a eu la Croix, et il a quitté.

LE COMTE. Et comment appelez-vous... un grand, qui était si fou ? attendez....

LE CHEV. Du Merlier ?

LE COMTE. Oui ; c'est cela, je l'aimais beaucoup.

LE CHEV. Il a été tué à Hastembeck.

LE COMTE. Ah, le pauvre diable ! Je ne sais pas si on nous fera bientôt souper.

LE CHEV. Mon Général, si vous voulez, j'irai voir.

LE COMTE. Oui, oui ; vous êtes ici le Junior ; mais voilà Madame Thomas, restez, restez.

## SCÈNE VI.

LE COMTE, MME. THOMAS, LE CHEVALIER.

LE COMTE. Eh bien, Madame Thomas, où en somme nous ?

MME. THOM. Je viens voir si ces messieurs veulent être servis ?

LE COMTE. Hé, mais sûrement, toute de suite.

MME. THOM. Allons, allons. (*Elle va chercher le souper.*)LE COMTE. Mettons-nous toujours à table. (*Il s'arrangent tous les deux et déploient leurs serviettes.*)MME. THOM. (*Apportant un gigot.*) Tenez, Messieurs, voilà un gigot qui a la meilleur mine du monde.

LE COMTE. Oui, mais il est bien petit, Madame Thomas.

MME. THOM. Pas trop, Monsieur ; vous en serez bien content.

LE CHEV. Si vous voulez, mon Général, je m'en vais le couper.

LE COMTE. Non, non, laissez-moi faire. (*Il coupe le gigot.*) Avez-vous faim ?

LE CHEV. Oui, vraiment, car je n'ai pas diné.

LE COMTE. Tant pis.

MME. THOM. Ah ça. Messieurs, vous n'avez plus besoin de rien.

LE COMTE. Vous n'avez pas autre chose ?

MME. THOM. Non, Monsieur, dont je suis bien fâchée. Quand vous appellerez, je viendrai tout de suite.

## SCÈNE VII.

LE COMTE, LE CHEVALIER.

LE COMTE. Tenez, Monsieur le Chevalier, voilà une bonne tranche. Un peu de jus. Je vous en redonnerai d'autre quand vous aurez mangé cela.

LE CHEV. (*Dévoiant.*) J'aurai bientôt fait.LE COMTE. (*Mangeant.*) Vous vous étouffez.

LE CHEV. Oh, que non.

LE COMTE. Allons, buvez un coup. (*Ils boivent.*)

LE CHEV. Mon Général, voulez-vous bien me donner une autre tranche,

LE COMTE. Vous mangez trop vite.

LE CHEV. Quand j'ai grand faim, je ne perds pas de temps, comme vous voyez.

LE COMTE. Oui, oui. *(Ils mangent vite tout les deux.)*

LE CHEV. Mon Général, je suis fâché de la peine ; mais si vous voulez me laissez prendre.

LE COMTE. *(Coupant.)* Hé, non, non, un moment s'il vous plait. Tenez, voilà une bon moceau.

LE CHEV. Oh, il sera bientôt expédié. *(Il mange d'une vitesse incroyable.)*

LE COMTE. *(à part en mangeant.)* Il faut prendre un parti ici.

LE CHEV. Mon Général, voulez-vous bien ?

LE COMTE. Buvez en attendant. *(Le Chevalier boit.)* Tenez, cela sera peut-être un peu dur. *(Il lui donne un morceau en faisant une grimace.)* Eh-bien, comment le trouvez-vous ? *(Il fait encore une grimace, et le Chevalier le regarde avec étonnement.)*

LE CHEV. Fort bon. *(Il le regard et le Comte redouble ses grimaces.)*

LE COMTE. Il y a à tirer. *(Il fait une grimace.)*

LE CHEV. Un peu ; mais cela ne fait rien. *(Le Comte fait encore une grimace qui étonne de plus en plus le Chevalier.)*

LE COMTE. Qu'est-ce que vous avez donc ? *(Il fait une grimace.)*

LE CHEV. C'est que... vous..

LE COMTE. *(faisant la grimace.)* Quoi ?

LE CHEV. Je ne sais pas ce que cela veut dire.

LE COMTE. *(faisant la grimace.)* Ce mouvement-là que je fais ?

LE CHEV. Oui, Mon Général.

LE COMTE. *(faisant la grimace.)* Je vous le dirai, si vous voulez ; ce n'est rien.

LE CHEV. Vous ne faisiez pas de même avant souper.

LE COMTE. *(faisant la grimace.)* Non, cela vient de me prendre tout-à-l'heure. Depuis quinze jours je suis comme cela souvent. Tenez, mangez ce petit morceau-là. *(Il fait la grimace.)*

LE CHEV. Et peut-on savoir d'où cela vient ?

LE COMTE. *(faisant la grimace.)* Je vous le dirai, si vous voulez. Il y a environ un mois que je fus mordu par un petit chien... *(Il fait la grimace.)*

LE CHEV. (*avec inquiétude*). Par un chien ?

LE COMTE. (*Il fait la grimace*). Oui, un petit chien noir  
Mangez donc.

LE CHEV. Je n'ai plus faim.

LE COMTE. (*faisant la grimace*). Quand je fais ce mouvement-là, je crois toujours le voir, ce chien, comme s'il allait se jeter sur moi. (*Il fait la grimace*). Mais ce n'est rien.

LE CHEV. (*se lève, prend son assiette, en regardant attentivement le Comte*).

LE COMTE. (*faisant la grimace*). Où allez vous ?

LE CHEV. (*s'en allant*). Je vais revenir.

LE COMTE. Mais restez donc.

## SCÈNE VIII.

LE COMTE, *mangeant*.

Si je n'avais pas pris ce parti-là, je me serais couché sans souper. (*Il mange le reste du gigot.*) Ils se disputent là-bas. Dépêchons-nous. (*Il boit*). Il n'est pas mauvais ce petit gigot-là. Quel train ! Madame Thomas ? Madame Thomas ?

## SCÈNE IX.

LE COMTE, MME. THOMAS.

MME THOM. (*sans paraître*). Monsieur, laissez-moi faire, je m'en vais lui parler.

LE COMTE. Eh-bien, venez donc.

MME THOM. (*à la porte tenant la clef*). Comment Monsieur...

LE COMTE. Qu'est-ce que vous avez donc ? entrez, entrez.

MME THOM. (*à la porte*). C'est Monsieur le Chevalier, qui dit comme cela, que c'est fort mal fait à moi de le faire souper avec un enragé.

LE COMTE. Il le croit réellement !

MME THOM. (*à la porte*). Comment s'il le croit ? Oui, Monsieur, il le croit, et c'est fort mal fait à vous de venir comme cela décrier mon auberge.

LE COMTE. Mais je ne suis pas enragé.

MME. THOM. (*à la porte.*) Pourquoi donc est-ce qu'il le dit ?  
LE COMTE. Approchez, approchez. Est-ce que les enragés boivent et mangent ?

MME. THOM. (*approchant.*) Ah ! c'est vrai il est donc fou.

LE COMTE. Apparemment.

MME. THOM. Je ne comprends pas cela.

LE COMTE. Faites le venir.

MME. THOM. (*criant.*) Monsieur le Chevalier, venez, venez.

LE COMTE. Allons, Chevalier, arrivez.

---

## SCÈNE X.

LE COMTE, LE CHEVALIER, MME THOM.

MME. THOM. Entrez donc, Monsieur le Comte n'est pas enragé.

LE CHEV. Vous n'êtes pas enragé.

LE COMTE. Je vous dis que non.

LE CHEV. (*avançant.*) J'ai crû que vous alliez le devenir.

LE COMTE. C'est un conte que je vous ai fait.

MME. THOM. Quand je vous l'ai dit, vous n'avez pas voulu me croire.

LE COMTE. Je vais boire à votre santé. (*Il bout.*)

MME. THOM. Vous savez bien que les enragés ne boivent ni ne mangent.

LE CHEV. Mais, mon Général, pourquoi faisiez-vous donc toutes ces grimaces.

LE COMTE. Pour vous empêcher de manger autant. Mais nous faisons la même route, et demain je vous promets de vous bien donner à diner.

LE CHEV. Ma foi, j'en été la dupe tout-à-fait.

LE COMTE. (*se levant.*) Voulez-vous que nous allions voir nos chevaux ?

LE CHEV. Je ne demande pas mieux.

MME. THOM. Pendant ce temps-là, je m'en vais desservir tout cela, et faire préparer vos lits. (*Elle emporte le plat et les assiettes.*)

LE COMTE. Vous ferez bien, Madame Thomas. Allons, venez, Chevalier. (*Ils sortent.*)

## VOCABULARY TO "L'ENRAGÉ."

|                                                      |                                                                                      |
|------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Lieutenant Général</i> , Lieutenant-General.      | <i>Les cotelettes</i> , cutlets.                                                     |
| <i>D'Infanterie</i> , of Infantry.                   | <i>Le boucher</i> , the butcher.                                                     |
| <i>La maîtresse d'auberge</i> , hostess.             | <i>Tuer</i> , to kill.                                                               |
| <i>Le cuisinier</i> , the cook.                      | <i>Jeudi</i> , Thursday.                                                             |
| <i>La Chambre</i> , the chamber.                     | <i>Le gigot</i> , a shoulder of mutton.                                              |
| <i>Plus de peur</i> , more fright.                   | <i>Par exemple</i> , for example.                                                    |
| <i>Que de mal</i> , than harm.                       | <i>Etre bien dur</i> , to be very tough.                                             |
| <i>La fenêtre</i> , the window.                      | <i>Mettre à la broche</i> , to put on the spit.                                      |
| <i>Fermer</i> , to shut.                             | <i>Bientôt cuit</i> , soon done, (cooked).                                           |
| <i>Bientôt</i> , soon.                               | <i>Va te promener</i> , clear out.                                                   |
| <i>Coucher</i> , to sleep, lie in a bed.             | <i>Mettre le couvert</i> , to set the table.                                         |
| <i>Le lit</i> , the bed.                             | <i>Tous les deux</i> , both of you.                                                  |
| <i>Le matelas</i> , the mattress.                    | <i>Prendre du tabac</i> , take snuff.                                                |
| <i>Rebattre</i> , to beat over again.                | <i>Se promener</i> , to walk.                                                        |
| <i>Mais encore</i> , but still.                      | <i>Diable d'auberge</i> devil of an inn.                                             |
| <i>L'écuyer (de cuisine)</i> head cook.              | <i>Rattraper</i> , to catch.                                                         |
| <i>Causar avec</i> , to chat with.                   | <i>L'enseigne</i> , the sign.                                                        |
| <i>Monter</i> , to come up.                          | <i>Les nœces et festins</i> , wedding and balls.                                     |
| <i>Servante (fem.)</i> servant.                      | <i>À pied à cheval</i> , on foot and on horseback : (i. e. for foot travellers, &c.) |
| <i>Les provisions</i> , the provisions.              | <i>Une avance</i> , a grain                                                          |
| <i>Etre difficile</i> , to be difficult.             | <i>Etre gâté</i> , to be spoiled.                                                    |
| <i>Une voix de veau</i> , a knuckle of veal.         | <i>Le mouton</i> , the mutton.                                                       |
| <i>Une outarde</i> , a bustard.                      | <i>Tué d'hier</i> , killed yesterday.                                                |
| <i>Le voyageur</i> , the traveller.                  | <i>Dur comme un chien</i> , tough as a dog.                                          |
| <i>Mois</i> , Month.                                 | <i>Choisir</i> , to choose.                                                          |
| <i>Le mariage</i> , marriage.                        | <i>Monseigneur l'intendant</i> , my lord the steward.                                |
| <i>Le bailli</i> , the bailiff.                      | <i>Ses gens</i> , his servants.                                                      |
| <i>Une fricassée de poulets</i> , fricassed chicken. | <i>Qui paie tout</i> , who pays all.                                                 |
| <i>Eclos</i> , hatched.                              | <i>De deux façons</i> or both kinds.                                                 |
| <i>Une compote, de pigeons</i> , pigeon-stew.        | <i>Pourvu</i> , provided.                                                            |
| <i>Jeter un sort sur</i> , to throw a spell over.    | <i>L'officier</i> , the officer.                                                     |
| <i>Le colombier</i> , the pigeon-house.              | <i>L'honneur</i> , honour.                                                           |
| <i>La viande de boucherie</i> , butchers' meat.      | <i>Est-il fort ?</i> is it large ? (strong.)                                         |
| <i>Accoutumé à servir</i> accustomed to serve.       | <i>Embarassé</i> embarrassed.                                                        |
|                                                      | <i>Le page</i> , the page.                                                           |



|                                                          |                                                                     |
|----------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>La cheminée</i> , the chimney.                        | <i>Il y a à tirer</i> , there's work for the teeth.                 |
| <i>Une grande révérence</i> , a low bow.                 | <i>Etonné de plus en plus</i> , more and more astonished.           |
| <i>Etre charmé</i> , to be delighted.                    | <i>Le mouvement</i> , the movement, motion.                         |
| <i>Le régiment</i> , the regiment.                       | <i>Ce que cela veut dire</i> , what that means.                     |
| <i>Lieutenant-colonel</i> , Lieutenant colonel.          | <i>Faire de même</i> , to do so.                                    |
| <i>Le bonhomme</i> , the old codger.                     | <i>Vient de me prendre tout-d-l'heure</i> , that as just seized me. |
| <i>Une lieutenance du Roi</i> , a king's lieutenancy.    | <i>Etre mordu</i> , to be bitten.                                   |
| <i>Un gros garçon</i> , a big fellow.                    | <i>Un petit chien noir</i> , a little black dog.                    |
| <i>Commandant de bataillon</i> , commander of battalion. | <i>Avec inquiétude</i> , with uneasiness.                           |
| <i>La croix</i> , the cross.                             | <i>Se jeter</i> , to throw one's self.                              |
| <i>Si fou</i> , so crazy.                                | <i>Prendre son assiette</i> , to take his plate.                    |
| <i>Le pauvre diable</i> , the poor devil.                | <i>Se disputer</i> , to dispute.                                    |
| <i>Déployer une serviette</i> , to unfold a napkin.      | <i>Se dépêcher</i> , to make haste.                                 |
| <i>Tenez</i> , hold.                                     | <i>Quel train !</i> what a bustle                                   |
| <i>La meilleure mine</i> , the best appearance.          | <i>Tenant la clef</i> , holding the key.                            |
| <i>Laisser faire</i> , to let do.                        | <i>Réellement</i> , really.                                         |
| <i>Tant pis</i> , so much the worse.                     | <i>Décrier</i> , to decry.                                          |
| <i>Une bonne tranche</i> , a good slice.                 | <i>Comprendre</i> , to understand.                                  |
| <i>Redonner</i> , to give again.                         | <i>Avançant</i> , coming forward.                                   |
| <i>Le jus</i> , the gravy.                               | <i>Le devenir</i> , to become so.                                   |
| <i>S'étouffer</i> , to choke one's self.                 | <i>Un conte</i> , a story.                                          |
| <i>Vite, vitesse</i> , quick, quickness.                 | <i>Empêcher</i> , to hinder.                                        |
| <i>Expédier</i> , to dispatch.                           | <i>La dupe</i> , the dupe.                                          |
| <i>Incroyable</i> , incredible.                          | <i>Desservir</i> , to clear away a table.                           |
| <i>Faire une grimace</i> , to make a face.               | <i>Préparer vos lits</i> , to prepare your beds.                    |
| <i>Regarder avec étonnement</i> , to look with wonder.   |                                                                     |
| <i>Redoubler</i> , to redouble.                          |                                                                     |

# PRIZE SCHOOL BOOKS.

---

The editions of the following School Books obtained the **FIRST PRIZE** and Diplomas at the Provincial Exhibitions, held at Montreal and Hamilton, in 1853, "For the best collection of School Books printed and bound in Canada."

## NATIONAL SERIES.

|                                            |                                                                                            |
|--------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| General Lessons, to be hung up in Schools. | English Grammar and Key.                                                                   |
| First Book of Lessons.                     | Book-keeping and Key.                                                                      |
| Second Book of Lessons.                    | Treatise on Mensuration.                                                                   |
| Sequel to the Second Book.                 | Appendix to Mensuration, for the use of Teachers.                                          |
| Third Book of Lessons.                     | Elements of Geometry.                                                                      |
| Fourth Book of Lessons.                    | Introduction to Geography and History, with Maps, Plates, &c., new edition, much improved. |
| Fifth Book of Lessons.                     |                                                                                            |
| First Book of Arithmetic and Key.          |                                                                                            |

Large colored Maps for School Rooms.

## CURRICULUM LATINUM.

|                      |                             |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| Cornelius Nepos,     | Cæsar de Bello Gallico.     |
| Virgilio Georgica.   | Q. Curtius                  |
| Cicero de Amicitia.  | Taciti Agricola.            |
| Cicero de Senectute. | Horatii Carmina.            |
| Ovidii Fasti.        | Price 7½d. to 1s. 3d. each. |

## CHEAP SCHOOL BOOKS.

|                                 |                                 |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| The Canadian Primer.            | Murray's Small English Grammar. |
| Manson's Primer.                | Walkingame's Arithmetic.        |
| Mavor's Spelling Book.          | The History of Canada.          |
| Carpenter's Spelling Book.      | Do. in French.                  |
| Webster's Spelling Book.        | History of England.             |
| Walker's Dictionary.            | The History of Rome.            |
| Lennie's Grammar.               | Geography of Canada.            |
| Murray's English Reader.        | Quarter Dollar Atlas.           |
| Murray's Large English Grammar. | Scripture Atlas.                |

## **PAPER, ACCOUNT BOOKS, STATIONERY, &c.**

The Subscriber has always on hand ample stocks of all kinds of plain and ruled **WRITING PAPERS**, also **DRAWING PAPERS**, Drawing Boards of all sizes, and Artists' and Engineers' materials in great variety. He has likewise on hand, or makes to order in any style of ruling and binding, **Ledgers, Journals, Day Books**, and other **Mercantile ACCOUNT BOOKS**.

---

## **SCHOOL REQUISITES.**

The Subscriber begs to draw attention to his stock of **Globes**, Outlined Maps for School Rooms, Cheap **Atlases**, **Copy Books**, **Slates**, **Mathematical Instruments**, &c., which will be found good in quality and reasonable in price.

---

## **WRITING PAPERS, &c.**

**Whatman's** and **Wilmot's** **Superfine, Imperial, Super Royal, Royal, Medium and Demy Writing Papers**; also, **Blue and Yellow Wove Folio, Large and Small Posts, Folio Medium Bank Post**, &c.

**POST AND NOTE PAPER**.—**Fine and Superfine, Large and Small, Thick Laid, Yellow and Blue Wove Post**, of the best makes, **Cream Laid Post, Fine and Superfine, Large and Small Thin Laid Yellow and Blue Wove Posts**; **Superfine Small Thick Yellow Wove Glazed, and Gilt Post**; **Superfine Laid Yellow and Blue Wove Note Paper**; **Extra Large Thin Post**,—also, the same of **Parisian make for Foreign Correspondence** in great variety; **Extra Satin Post Paper**; **Black Edged and Black Bordered Post and Note Paper**, various breadths.—**Post, with Engraved Views of Montreal, Quebec, Kingston, Niagara**, &c. &c.

---

## **MISCELLANEOUS STATIONERY.**

**Wax, Wafers, Ink, Quills, Steel Pens, Penknives, Music and Drawing Books**, and every article in the line.

---

## **PRINTING.**

**Books, Pamphlets, &c.**, executed with neatness and despatch.

**CHARLES G. DAGG.**  
**ST. FRANCOIS XAVIER STREET, MONTREAL.**

